# Attachment A

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

## STATE OF RHODE ISLAND PROVIDENCE, SC.

#### **SUPERIOR COURT**

### STATE OF RHODE ISLAND

Plaintiff,

VS.

Case Number:

CHEVRON CORP.;

CHEVRON U.S.A. INC.;

EXXONMOBIL CORP.;

BP P.L.C.;

BP AMERICA, INC.;

BP PRODUCTS NORTH AMERICA, INC.;

ROYAL DUTCH SHELL PLC;

MOTIVA ENTERPRISES, LLC;

SHELL OIL PRODUCTS COMPANY LLC;

CITGO PETROLEUM CORP.;

CONOCOPHILLIPS;

CONOCOPHILLIPS COMPANY;

PHILLIPS 66;

MARATHON OIL COMPANY;

MARATHON OIL CORPORATION;

MARATHON PETROLEUM CORP.;

MARATHON PETROLEUM COMPANY LP;

SPEEDWAY LLC;

HESS CORP.;

LUKOIL PAN AMERICAS, LLC;

GETTY PETROLEUM MARKETING, INC.; AND

DOES 1 through 100, inclusive,

Defendants.

JURY TRIAL DEMANDED

Case Number: PC-2018-4716 Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

I.	INT	RODUCTION 1	
II.	PARTIES		
	A.	Plaintiff	
	B.	Defendants	
III.	AG	ENCY	
IV.	JUI	RISDICTION AND VENUE27	
V.	FAC	CTUAL BACKGROUND27	
	A.	Global Warming—Observed Effects and Known Cause	
	$\mathbf{B}$ .	Sea Level Rise—Known Causes and Observed Effects	
	C.	Warming Air Temperatures—Known Causes and Observed Effects	
	D.	Disruption to the Hydrologic Cycle—Known Causes and Observed Effects 41	
		i. Extreme Precipitation	
		ii. Drought	
	E.	Ocean Warming and Acidification—Known Causes and Observed Effects 45	
	F.	Public Health Impacts of Anthropogenic Global Warming	
	G.	Attri bution	
	H.	Defendants Went to Great Lengths to Understand the Hazards Associated with, and Knew or Should Have Known of the Dangers Associated with the Extraction, Promotion, and Sale of Their Fossil Fuel Products	
	I.	Defendants Did Not Disclose Known Harms Associated with the Extraction, Promotion, and Consumption of Their Fossil Fuel Products, and Instead Affirmatively Acted to Obscure Those Harms and Engaged in a Concerted Campaign to Evade Regulation.	
	J.	In Contrast to Their Public Statements, Defendants' Internal Actions Demonstrate Their Awareness of and Intent to Profit from the Unabated Use of Fossil Fuel Products	
	K.	Defendants' Actions Prevented the Development of Alternatives That Would Have Eased the Transition to a Less Fossil Fuel Dependent Economy	
	L.	Defendants Caused Rhode Island's Injuries	

Case Number: PC-2018-4716
Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court
Submitted: 7/2/2018 0:57 AM

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

VI.	CAUSES OF ACTION	115	
	FIRST CAUSE OF ACTION	115	
	Public Nuisance	115	
	SECOND CAUSE OF ACTION	120	
	Strict Liability for Failure to Warn	120	
	THIRD CAUSE OF ACTION	123	
	Strict Liability for Design Defect	123	
	FOURTH CAUSE OF ACTION	128	
	Negligent Design Defect	128	
	FIFTH CAUSE OF ACTION	131	
	Negligent Failure to Warn	131	
	SIXTH CAUSE OF ACTION	133	
	Trespass	133	
	SEVENTH CAUSE OF ACTION	135	
	Impairment of Public Trust Resources	135	
	EIGHTH CAUSE OF ACTION	138	
	State Environmental Rights Act, Equitable Relief Action	138	
VII.	PRAYER FOR RELIEF	140	
REOU	REQUEST FOR JURY TRIAL		

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

#### PLAINTIFF'S COMPLAINT

## I. INTRODUCTION

Defendants, major corporate members of the fossil fuel industry, have known for 1. nearly a half century that unrestricted production and use of their fossil fuel products create greenhouse gas pollution that warms the planet and changes our climate. They have known for decades that those impacts could be catastrophic and that only a narrow window existed to take action before the consequences would be irreversible. They have nevertheless engaged in a coordinated, multi-front effort to conceal and deny their own knowledge of those threats, discredit the growing body of publicly available scientific evidence, and persistently create doubt in the minds of customers, consumers, regulators, the media, journalists, teachers, and the public about the reality and consequences of the impacts of their fossil fuel pollution. At the same time, Defendants have promoted and profited from a massive increase in the extraction and consumption of oil, coal, and natural gas, which has in turn caused an enormous, foreseeable, and avoidable increase in global greenhouse gas pollution and a concordant increase in the concentration of greenhouse gases, particularly carbon dioxide ("CO<sub>2</sub>") and methane, in the Earth's atmosphere. Those disruptions of the Earth's otherwise balanced carbon cycle have substantially contributed to a wide range of dire climate-related effects, including, but not limited to, global warming, rising atmospheric and ocean temperatures, ocean acidification, melting polar ice caps and glaciers, more extreme and volatile weather, drought, and sea level rise. Plaintiff, the State of Rhode Island,<sup>2</sup> along with the State's citizens, infrastructure, and natural resources, suffer the consequences.

As used in this Complaint, "greenhouse gases" refers collectively to carbon dioxide, methane, and nitrous oxide. Where a source refers to a specific gas or gases, or when a process relates only to a specific gas or gases, this Complaint refers to them by name.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> As used in this Complaint when referring to geographic locations, "Rhode Island" and "State" refer to all non-federal lands within the geographic boundaries of the State of Rhode Island.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

2. Defendants are vertically integrated extractors, producers, refiners, manufacturers, distributors, promoters, marketers, and sellers of fossil fuel products. Decades of scientific research show that pollution from the production and use of Defendants' fossil fuel products plays a direct and substantial role in the unprecedented rise in emissions of greenhouse gas pollution and increased atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations since the mid-20<sup>th</sup> century. This dramatic increase in atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> and other greenhouse gases is the main driver of the gravely dangerous changes occurring to the global climate.

3. Anthropogenic (human-caused) greenhouse gas pollution, primarily in the form of CO<sub>2</sub>, is far and away the dominant cause of global warming, and results in severe impacts including, but not limited to, sea level rise, disruption to the hydrologic cycle, more frequent and more intense drought, more frequent and more extreme precipitation, more frequent and more intense heatwaves, and associated consequences of those physical and environmental changes.<sup>3</sup> The primary source of this pollution is the extraction, production, and consumption of coal, oil, and natural gas, referred to collectively in this Complaint as "fossil fuel products."<sup>4</sup>

4. The rate at which Defendants have extracted and sold fossil fuel products has exploded since the Second World War, as have emissions from those products. The substantial majority of all greenhouse gas emissions in history has occurred since the 1950s, a period known

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>3</sup> See IPCC, Climate Change 2014: Synthesis Report, Contribution of Working Groups I, II and III to the Fifth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change [Core Writing Team, R.K. Pachauri and L.A. Meyer (eds.)]. IPCC, Geneva, Switzerland (2014), 6, Figure SMP.3, https://www.ipcc.ch/report/ar5/syr.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>4</sup> See C. Le Quéré et al., Global Carbon Budget 2016, EARTH SYST. SCI. DATA 8, 632 (2016), http://www.earth-syst-sci-data.net/8/605/2016. Cumulative emissions since the beginning of the industrial revolution to 2015 were 413 gigatons of carbon ("GtC") attributable to fossil fuels, and 190 GtC attributable to land use change. Id. Global CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from fossil fuels and industry remained nearly constant at 9.9 GtC in 2015, distributed among coal (41 %), oil (34 %), gas (19 %), cement (5.6 %), and gas flaring (0.7 %). Id. at 629.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

as the "Great Acceleration." About three quarters of all industrial CO<sub>2</sub> emissions in history have

occurred since the 1960s. and more than half have occurred since the late 1980s. The annual rate

of CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from extraction, production, and consumption of fossil fuels has increased by

more than 60% since 1990.8

5. Defendants have known for nearly 50 years that greenhouse gas pollution from their

fossil fuel products has a significant impact on the Earth's climate and sea levels. Defendants'

awareness of the negative implications of their own behavior corresponds almost exactly with the

Great Acceleration, and with skyrocketing greenhouse gas emissions. With that knowledge,

Defendants took steps to protect their own assets from these threats through immense internal

investment in research, infrastructure improvements, and plans to exploit new opportunities in a

warming world.

Instead of working to reduce the use and combustion of fossil fuel products, lower 6.

the rate of greenhouse gas emissions, minimize the damage associated with continued high use

and combustion of such products, and ease the transition to a lower carbon economy, Defendants

concealed the dangers, sought to undermine public support for greenhouse gas regulation, and

engaged in massive campaigns to promote the ever-increasing use of their products at ever greater

volumes. Thus, each Defendant's conduct has contributed substantially to the buildup of CO<sub>2</sub> in

the environment that drives global warming and its physical, environmental, and

socioeconomic consequences.

<sup>5</sup> Will Steffen et al., The Trajectory of the Anthropocene: The Great Acceleration, 2 THE

ANTHROPOCENE REVIEW 81, 81 (Jan. 2015),

http://journals.sagepub.com/doi/abs/10.1177/2053019614564785.

<sup>6</sup> R. J. Andres et al., A Synthesis of Carbon Dioxide Emissions from Fossil-Fuel Combustion, 9

BIOGEOSCIENCES 1845, 1851 (May 2012), http://www.biogeosciences.net/9/1845/2012.

<sup>7</sup> Id. at 1848.

<sup>8</sup> C. Le Quéré et al., supra note 4, at 630.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

7. Defendants are directly responsible for 182.9 gigatons of CO<sub>2</sub> emissions between

1965 and 2015, representing 14.81% of total emissions of that potent greenhouse gas during that

period. Accordingly, Defendants are directly responsible for a substantial portion of past and

committed sea level rise (sea level rise that will occur even in the absence of any future emissions),

as well as for a substantial portion of changes to the hydrologic cycle, because of the consumption

of their fossil fuel products.

8. As a direct and proximate consequence of Defendants' wrongful conduct described

in this Complaint, average sea level will rise substantially along Rhode Island's coast; average

temperatures and extreme heat days will increase; flooding, extreme precipitation events such as

tropical storms and hurricanes, and drought will become more frequent and more severe; and the

ocean will warm and become more acidic. The State, situated on the coast of Southern New

England boasting over 400 miles of coastline is particularly vulnerable to sea level rise, cyclones,

and flooding, and already has spent significant funds to study, mitigate, and adapt to the effects of

global warming. Climate change impacts already adversely affect Rhode Island and jeopardize

State-owned or operated facilities critical for operations, utility services, and risk management, as

well as real property and other assets that are essential to community health, safety, and well-being.

9. The State of Rhode Island has engaged in several planning processes to prepare for

the multitude of impacts from climatic shifts and has recognized increasingly severe consequences.

10. Defendants' production, promotion, and marketing of fossil fuel products,

simultaneous concealment of the known hazards of those products, and their championing of anti-

science campaigns, actually and proximately caused Rhode Island's injuries.

11. Accordingly, the State brings claims against Defendants for Public Nuisance, and

Strict Liability for Failure to Warn, Strict Liability for Design Defect, Negligent Design Defect,

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

Negligent Failure to Warn, Trespass, Impairment of Public Trust Resources, and violations of the

State Environmental Rights Act.

12. By this action, Rhode Island seeks to ensure that the parties who have profited from

externalizing the responsibility for sea level rise, drought, extreme precipitation events, heatwaves,

other results of the changing hydrologic and meteorological regime caused by global warming,

and associated consequences of those physical and environmental changes, bear the costs of those

impacts on Rhode Island, rather than the State, local taxpayers, residents, or broader segments of

the public. Rhode Island does not seek to impose liability on Defendants for harms other than those

to the State, including in its parens patriae capacity, nor for their direct emissions of greenhouse

gases, and does not seek to restrain Defendants from engaging in their business operations.

II. PARTIES

A. Plaintiff

13. Plaintiff, the State of Rhode Island, by and through the Attorney General of the

State of Rhode Island ("Rhode Island" or the "State"), brings this action as an exercise of its

authority to protect public trust resources and its police power, which includes, but is not limited

to, its power to prevent pollution of the State's property and waters, to prevent and abate nuisances.

and to prevent and abate hazards to public health, safety, welfare, and the environment.

14. The State also brings this action in its parens patriae capacity for the benefit of the

citizens of the State.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

15. Rhode Island is already experiencing sea level rise and associated impacts. The

State will experience significant additional sea level rise over the coming decades through at least

the end of the century.9

16. The sea level rise impacts to the State associated with an increase in average mean

sea level height include, but are not limited to, permanent increased inundation and temporary

flooding in natural and built environments because of higher tides and intensified wave and storm

surge events; aggravated wave impacts, including erosion, damage, and destruction of built

structures and infrastructure, as well as natural features such as cliffs, beaches, and dunes, with

consequent landslides; changes in sediment supply that could alter or destroy natural coastal

habitats such as beaches and wetlands, which otherwise would have naturally mitigated sea level

rise impacts; and saltwater intrusion on groundwater and built infrastructure.

17. In addition, Rhode Island is and will continue to be impacted by increased

temperatures and disruptions to the hydrologic cycle. The State is already experiencing a climatic

and meteorological shift toward winters and springs with more extreme precipitation events

contrasted by hotter, drier, and longer summers. These changes have led to increased property

damage, economic injuries, and impacts to public health. The State must spend substantial funds

to plan for and respond to these phenomena, and to mitigate their secondary and tertiary impacts.

18. Compounding these environmental impacts are cascading social and economic

impacts that cause injuries to the State and that arise out of localized climate change-related

conditions.

<sup>9</sup> Erika Spanger-Siegfried et al., When Rising Seas Hit Home: Hard Choices Ahead for Hundreds of US Coastal Communities, Union of Concerned Scientists, 10–11 (Apr. 2017), https://www.ucsusa.org/sites/default/files/attach/2017/07/when-rising-seas-hit-home-full-

report.pdf.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

## B. Defendants

19. Defendants are responsible for a substantial portion of the total greenhouse gases emitted since 1965. Defendants, individually and collectively, are responsible for extracting, refining, processing, producing, promoting, and marketing fossil fuel products, the normal and intended use of which has led to the emission of a substantial percentage of the total volume of greenhouse gases released into the atmosphere since 1965. Indeed, between 1965 and 2015, the named Defendants extracted from the earth enough fossil fuel materials (i.e. crude oil, coal, and natural gas) to account for more than one in every seven tons of CO<sub>2</sub> and methane emitted worldwide. Accounting for their wrongful promotion and marketing activities, Defendants bear a dominant responsibility for global warming generally, and for Plaintiff's injuries in particular.

20. When this Complaint references an act or omission of the Defendants, unless specifically attributed or otherwise stated, such references should be interpreted to mean that the officers, directors, agents, employees, or representatives of the Defendants committed or authorized such an act or omission, or failed to adequately supervise or properly control or direct their employees while engaged in the management, direction, operation or control of the affairs of Defendants, and did so while acting within the scope of their employment or agency.

#### 21. Chevron Entities

a. Chevron Corporation is a multinational, vertically integrated energy and chemicals company incorporated in the State of Delaware, with its global headquarters and principal place of business in San Ramon, California.

b. Chevron Corporation operates through a web of United States and international subsidiaries at all levels of the fossil fuel supply chain. Chevron Corporation's and its subsidiaries' operations consist of exploring for, developing, and producing crude oil and natural gas; processing, liquefaction, transportation, and regasification associated with liquefied

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

natural gas; transporting crude oil by major international oil export pipelines; transporting, storage,

and marketing of natural gas; refining crude oil into petroleum products; marketing of crude oil

and refined products; transporting crude and refined oil products by pipeline, marine vessel, motor

equipment, and rail car; basic and applied research in multiple scientific fields including of

chemistry, geology, and engineering; and manufacturing and marketing of commodity

petrochemicals, plastics for industrial uses, and fuel and lubricant additives.

Chevron Corporation controls and has controlled companywide decisions C.

about the quantity and extent of fossil fuel production and sales, including those of its subsidiaries.

d. Chevron Corporation controls and has controlled companywide decisions

related to climate change and greenhouse gas emissions from its fossil fuel products, including

those of its subsidiaries.

Chevron U.S.A. Inc. is a Pennsylvania corporation with its principal place e.

of business located in San Ramon, California. Chevron U.S.A. Inc. is qualified to do business in

Rhode Island. Chevron U.S.A. Inc. is a wholly owned subsidiary of Chevron Corporation that acts

on Chevron Corporation's behalf and subject to Chevron Corporation's control. Chevron U.S.A.

Inc. was formerly known as, and did or does business as, and/or is the successor in liability to Gulf

Oil Corporation, Gulf Oil Corporation of Pennsylvania, Chevron Products Company, Chevron

Chemical Company, Chevron Energy Solutions Company, ChevronTexaco Products Company,

Chevron U.S.A. Production Company, and Chevron U.S.A. Products Company.

f. "Chevron" as used hereafter, means collectively, Defendants Chevron

Corporation and Chevron U.S.A. Inc., and their predecessors, successors, parents, subsidiaries,

affiliates, and divisions.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

g. Chevron directs and has directed substantial fossil fuel-related business to

Rhode Island. A substantial portion of Chevron's fossil fuel products are or have been extracted,

refined, transported, traded, distributed, marketed, promoted, manufactured, sold, and/or

consumed in Rhode Island, from which Chevron derives and has derived substantial revenue. For

instance, Chevron formerly owned and operated a petroleum products terminal on Veteran's

Memorial Parkway in East Providence that was used for oil storage and fossil fuel product

distribution, marketing, and/or sales. Additionally, Chevron markets and/or has marketed gasoline

and other fossil fuel products to consumers, including through Chevron- and Gulf-branded

petroleum service stations in Rhode Island.

22. ExxonMobil

a. Exxon Mobil Corporation, doing business as ExxonMobil, is a

multinational, vertically integrated energy and chemicals company incorporated in the State of

New Jersey with its headquarters and principal place of business in Irving, Texas. Exxon is among

the largest publicly traded international oil and gas companies in the world. Exxon Mobil

Corporation was formerly known as, did or does business as, and/or is the successor in liability to

ExxonMobil Refining and Supply Company, Exxon Chemical U.S.A., ExxonMobil Chemical

Corporation, ExxonMobil Chemical U.S.A., ExxonMobil Refining & Supply Corporation, Exxon

Company, U.S.A., Exxon Corporation, and Mobil Corporation.

b. Exxon Mobil Corporation controls and has controlled companywide

decisions about the quantity and extent of fossil fuel production and sales, including those of its

subsidiaries. Exxon Mobil Corporation recently represented that its success, including its "ability

to mitigate risk and provide attractive returns to shareholders, depends on [its] ability to

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

successfully manage [its] overall portfolio, including diversification among types and locations of

our projects."

c. Exxon Mobil Corporation controls and has controlled companywide

decisions related to climate change and greenhouse gas emissions from its fossil fuel products,

including those of its subsidiaries. Exxon Mobil Corporation's Board, or an individual/sub-set of

the Board, or another committee appointed by the Board, holds the highest level of direct

responsibility for climate change policy within the company. Exxon Mobil Corporation's

Chairman of the Board and Chief Executive Officer, its President and the other members of its

Management Committee are actively engaged in discussions relating to greenhouse gas emissions

and the risks of climate change on an ongoing basis. Exxon Mobil Corporation require its

subsidiaries to provide an estimate of greenhouse gas-related emissions costs in their economic

projections when seeking funding for capital investments.

d. ExxonMobil Oil Corporation is wholly-owned subsidiary of Exxon Mobil

Corporation that acts on Exxon Mobil Corporation's behalf and subject to Exxon Mobil

Corporation's control. ExxonMobil Oil Corporation is incorporated in the State of New York with

its principal place of business in Irving, Texas. ExxonMobil Oil Corporation is qualified to do

business in Rhode Island. ExxonMobil Oil Corporation was formerly known as, did or does

business as, and/or is the successor in liability to Mobil Oil Corporation.

e. "Exxon" as used hereafter, means collectively defendants Exxon Mobil

Corporation and ExxonMobil Oil Corporation, and their predecessors, successors, parents,

subsidiaries, affiliates, and divisions.

f. Exxon consists of numerous divisions and affiliates in all areas of the fossil

fuel industry, including exploration for and production of crude oil and natural gas; manufacture

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

of petroleum products; and transportation, marketing, promotion, and sale of crude oil, natural gas,

and petroleum products. Exxon is also a major manufacturer and marketer of commodity

petrochemical products.

Exxon directs and has directed substantial fossil fuel-related business to

Rhode Island. A substantial portion of Exxon's fossil fuel products are or have been extracted,

refined, transported, traded, distributed, marketed, promoted, manufactured, sold, and/or

consumed in Rhode Island, from which Exxon derives and has derived substantial revenue. For

example, Exxon markets and/or has marketed gasoline and other fossil fuel products to consumers,

including through Mobil-branded petroleum service stations in Rhode Island. Additionally, Exxon

has owned and operated a fossil fuel product terminal in East Providence that was used for

petroleum product storage, formulation, repackaging, and marketing, among other uses.

**BP** Entities 23.

> BP P.L.C. is a multinational, vertically integrated energy and petrochemical a.

public limited company, registered in England and Wales with its principal place of business in

London, England. BP P.L.C. consists of three main operating segments: (1) exploration and

production, (2) refining and marketing, and (3) gas power and renewables. BP P.L.C. is the

ultimate parent company for numerous subsidiaries that find and produce oil and gas worldwide,

that refine oil into fossil fuel products such as gasoline, and that market and sell oil, fuel, other

refined petroleum products, and natural gas worldwide. BP P.L.C.'s subsidiaries explore for oil

and natural gas under a wide range of licensing, joint arrangement, and other contractual

agreements.

BP P.L.C. controls and has controlled companywide decisions about the b.

quantity and extent of fossil fuel production and sales, including those of its subsidiaries. BPP.L.C.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

is the ultimate decisionmaker on fundamental decisions about the company's core business, i.e.,

the level of companywide fossil fuels to produce, including production among BP P.L.C.'s

subsidiaries. For instance, BP P.L.C. reported that in 2016–2017 it brought online thirteen major

exploration and production projects. These contributed to a 12% increase in the BP group's overall

fossil fuel product production. These projects were carried out by BPP.L.C.'s subsidiaries. Based

on these projects, BP P.L.C. expects the company to deliver to customers 900,000 barrels of new

product per day by 2021. BP P.L.C. further reported that in 2017 it sanctioned three new

exploration projects in Trinidad, India, and the Gulf of Mexico and added 143% reserves

replacement for the group.

BP P.L.C. controls and has controlled companywide decisions about the C.

quantity and extent of fossil fuel production, including those of its subsidiaries. BP P.L.C. makes

fossil fuel production decisions for the entire BP group based on a number of factors, including

climate change. BP P.L.C.'s Board, an individual/subset of the Board, or a committee appointed

by the Board, is the highest level within the company with direct responsibility for climate change

policy. BP P.L.C.'s chief executive is responsible for maintaining the BP group's system of

internal control that governs the BP group's business conduct. BP P.L.C. reviews climate change

risks facing the BP group through two executive committees chaired by the group chief executive

and one working group chaired by the executive vice president and group chief of staff, as part of

BP group's established management structure.

d. BP America Inc. is a wholly-owned subsidiary of BP P.L.C. that acts on BP

P.L.C.'s behalf and subject to BP P.L.C.'s control. BP America Inc. is a vertically integrated

energy and petrochemical company incorporated in the State of Delaware with its headquarters

and principal place of business in Houston, Texas. BP America Inc., consists of numerous

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

divisions and affiliates in all aspects of the fossil fuel industry, including exploration for and

production of crude oil and natural gas; manufacture of petroleum products; and transportation,

marketing, and sale of crude oil, natural gas, and petroleum products. BP America Inc. has been

qualified to do business in Rhode Island. BP America Inc. was formerly known as, did or does

business as, and/or is the successor in liability to BP Products North America Inc., Atlantic

Richfield Company, BP Amoco Corporation, Amoco Corporation, Amoco Oil Company, The

American Oil Company, BP Exploration & Oil Inc., Sohio Oil Company, Standard Oil of Ohio

(SOHIO), Standard Oil (Indiana), BP Amoco Plc, BP Oil Inc., BP Oil Company, Atlantic Richfield

Delaware Corporation, Atlantic Richfield Company (a Pennsylvania corporation), ARCO

Products Company, and Arco Chemical Company, a division of Atlantic Richfield Company.

e. BP Products North America Inc. is a subsidiary of BP P.L.C. that acts on

BP P.L.C.'s behalf and subject to BP P.L.C.'s control. BP Products North America Inc. is engaged

in fossil fuel exploration, production, refining, and marketing. BP Products North America Inc. is

incorporated in Maryland and has its principal office in Naperville, Illinois. BP Products North

America Inc. qualified to do business in Rhode Island.

f. Defendants BP P.L.C., BP America, Inc., BP Products North America, Inc.,

and their predecessors, successors, parents, subsidiaries, affiliates, and divisions are collectively

referred to herein as "BP."

g. BP directs and has directed substantial fossil fuel-related business to Rhode

Island. A substantial portion of BP's fossil fuel products are or have been extracted, refined,

transported, traded, distributed, marketed, promoted, manufactured, sold, and/or consumed in

Rhode Island, from which BP derives and has derived substantial revenue. For example, BP

predecessors-in-interest Arco and Amoco owned and operated a petroleum terminal at Kettle Point

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

in East Providence that began operating in the early 20th century. The terminal was used for fossil

fuel product storage and marketing. BP is the current owner of the terminal property. Additionally,

BP markets and/or has marketed gasoline and other fossil fixel products to consumers through BP-

and Amoco-branded petroleum service stations in Rhode Island. BP owns and operates an

interactive webpage that allow consumers to locate BP-branded gas stations in the state.

24. **Shell Entities** 

> Royal Dutch Shell PLC is a vertically integrated, multinational energy and a.

petrochemical company. Royal Dutch Shell PLC is incorporated in England and Wales, with its

headquarters and principle place of business in the Hague, Netherlands. Royal Dutch Shell PLC

consists of over a thousand divisions, subsidiaries, and affiliates engaged in all aspects of the fossil

fuel industry, including exploration, development, extraction, manufacturing, and energy

production, transport, trading, marketing, and sales.

b. Royal Dutch Shell PLC controls and has controlled companywide decisions

about the quantity and extent of fossil fuel production and sales, including those of its subsidiaries.

Royal Dutch Shell PLC's Board of Directors in the Hague determines whether and to what extent

Shell subsidiary holdings around the globe produce Shell-branded fossil fuel products. For

instance, Royal Dutch Shell PLC's Board of Directors makes individual decisions on whether and

when to initiate drilling in particular oil reserves.

Royal Dutch Shell PLC controls and has controlled companywide decisions c.

related to climate change and greenhouse gas emissions from its fossil fuel products, including

those of its subsidiaries. Overall accountability for climate change within the Shell group of

companies lies with Royal Dutch Shell PLC's Chief Executive Officer and Executive Committee.

Additionally, Royal Dutch Shell PLC has directed its subsidiaries to reduce the carbon footprint

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

of all fossil fuel products produced under the Shell brand, including those of its subsidiaries, and

across all upstream and downstream segments of its operations.

d. Shell Oil Company is a wholly owned subsidiary of Royal Dutch Shell PLC

that acts on Royal Dutch Shell PLC's behalf and subject to Royal Dutch Shell PLC's control. Shell

Oil Company is incorporated in Delaware and with its principal place of business in Houston,

Texas. Shell Oil Company is qualified to do business in Rhode Island. Shell Oil Company was

formerly known as, did or does business as, and/or is the successor in liability to Deer Park

Refining LP, Shell Oil, Shell Oil Products, Shell Chemical, Shell Trading US, Shell Trading (US)

Company, Shell Energy Services, Texaco Inc., The Pennzoil Company, Shell Oil Products

Company LLC, Shell Oil Products Company, Star Enterprise, LLC, Star Enterprise LLC,

Pennzoil-Quaker State Company, and Motiva Enterprises LLC.

e. Motiva Enterprises LLC has refined and marketed and continues to refine

and market Shell-branded products through approximately 8,300 Shell-branded petroleum service

stations in the eastern and southern United States. Motiva Enterprises LLC is incorporated in

Delaware with its principal place of business in Houston, Texas. Motiva Enterprises LLC is

qualified to do business and is registered in Rhode Island as a petroleum product merchant. At

times relevant to this Complaint, Motiva Enterprises LLC has been a wholly owned subsidiary of

Royal Dutch Shell PLC that acts on Royal Dutch Shell PLC's behalf and subject to Royal Dutch

Shell PLC's control.

f. Defendants Royal Dutch Shell PLC, Shell Oil Company, Motiva

Enterprises LLC, and their predecessors, successors, parents, subsidiaries, affiliates, and divisions

are collectively referred to as "Shell."

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

> Shell directs and has directed substantial fossil fuel-related business to g.

Rhode Island. A substantial portion of Shell's fossil fuel products are or have been extracted,

refined, transported, traded, distributed, marketed, promoted, manufacturer, sold, and/or consumed

in Rhode Island, from which Shell derives and has derived substantial revenue. For example, Shell

until 2017 operated the largest capacity fossil fuel terminal in Rhode Island, at 520 Allens Avenue

in Providence. The terminal was used for fossil fuel product storage, distribution, and sales.

Additionally, Shell markets and/or has marketed gasoline and other fossil fuel products to

consumers through Shell-branded petroleum service stations in Rhode Island. Shell owns and

operates an interactive webpage that allows consumers to locate Shell-branded gas stations in

the state.

**ConocoPhillips Entities** 25.

> ConocoPhillips is a multinational energy company incorporated in the State a.

of Delaware and with its principal place of business in Houston, Texas. ConocoPhillips consists

of numerous divisions, subsidiaries, and affiliates that carry out ConocoPhillips's fundamental

decisions related to all aspects of the fossil fuel industry, including exploration, extraction,

production, manufacture, transport, and marketing.

b. ConocoPhillips controls and has controlled companywide decisions about

the quantity and extent of fossil fuel production and sales, including those of its subsidiaries.

ConocoPhillips' most recent annual report subsumes the operations of the entire ConocoPhillips

group of subsidiaries under its name. Therein, ConocoPhillips represents that its value—for which

ConocoPhillips maintains ultimate responsibility—is a function of its decisions to direct

subsidiaries to explore for and produce fossil fuels: "Unless we successfully add to our existing

proved reserves, our future crude oil, bitumen, natural gas and natural gas liquids production will

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

decline, resulting in an adverse impact to our business." ConocoPhillips optimizes the

ConocoPhillips group's oil and gas portfolio to fit ConocoPhillips' strategic plan. For example, in

November 2016, ConocoPhillips announced a plan to generate \$5 billion to \$8 billion of proceeds

over two years by optimizing its business portfolio, including its fossil fuel product business, to

focus on low cost-of-supply fossil fuel production projects that strategically fit its

development plans.

c. ConocoPhillips controls and has controlled companywide decisions related

to global warming and greenhouse gas emissions from its fossil fuel products, including those of

its subsidiaries. For instance, ConocoPhillips' Board has the highest level of direct responsibility

for climate change policy within the company. ConocoPhillips has developed and implements a

corporate Climate Change Action Plan to govern climate change decision-making across all

entities in the ConocoPhillips group.

d. ConocoPhillips Company is a wholly owned subsidiary of ConocoPhillips

that acts on ConocoPhillips' behalf and subject to ConocoPhillips' control. ConocoPhillips

Company is incorporated in Delaware and has its principal office in Bartlesville, Oklahoma.

ConocoPhillips Company is qualified to do business in Rhode Island and has a registered agent

for service of process in Rhode Island.

e. Phillips 66 is a multinational energy and petrochemical company

incorporated in Delaware and with its principal place of business in Houston, Texas. It

encompasses downstream fossil fuel processing, refining, transport, and marketing segments that

were formerly owned and/or controlled by ConocoPhillips.

f. Phillips 66 Company is a subsidiary of Phillips 66 that acts on Phillips 66's

behalf and subject to Phillips 66's control. Phillips 66 Company is incorporated in Delaware and

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

has its principal of fice in Houston, Texas. Phillips 66 Company is qualified to do business in Rhode

Island and has a registered agent for service of process in Rhode Island. Phillips 66 Company was

formerly known as, did or does business as, and/or is the successor in liability to Phillips Petroleum

Company, Conoco, Inc., Tosco Corporation, and Tosco Refining Co.

g. Defendants ConocoPhillips, ConocoPhillips Company, Phillips 66, Phillips

66 Company, and their predecessors, successors, parents, subsidiaries, affiliates, and divisions are

collectively referred to herein as "ConocoPhillips."

h. ConocoPhillips transacts and has transacted substantial fossil fuel-related

business in Rhode Island. A substantial portion of ConocoPhillips's fossil fuel products are or have

been extracted, refined, transported, traded, distributed, promoted, marketed, manufactured, sold,

and/or consumed in Rhode Island, from which ConocoPhillips derives and has derived substantial

revenue. For instance, ConocoPhillips shipped gasoline manufactured at their refineries via

common carrier pipelines intended to deliver gasoline to Petroleum Administration for Defense

District 1, including Rhode Island.

26. Citgo Petroleum Corporation

a. Citgo Petroleum Corporation ("Citgo") is a direct, wholly owned subsidiary

of PDV America, Incorporated, which is a wholly owned subsidiary of PDV Holding,

Incorporated. These organizations' ultimate parent is Petróleos de Venezuela, S.A. ("PDVSA"),

an entity wholly owned by the Republic of Venezuela that plans, coordinates, supervises, and

controls activities carried out by its subsidiaries. Citgo is incorporated in the State of Delaware

and maintains its headquarters in Houston, Texas. Citgo is qualified to do business in

Rhode Island.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

> b. Citgo controls and has controlled companywide decisions about the

quantity and extent of fossil fuel production and sales, including those of its subsidiaries.

C. Citgo controls and has controlled companywide decisions related to climate

change and greenhouse gas emissions from its fossil fuel products, including those of

its subsidiaries.

d. Citgo and its subsidiaries are engaged in refining, marketing, and

transporting petroleum products, including gasoline, diesel fuel, jet fuel, petrochemicals,

lubricants, asphalt, and refined waxes.

Citgo directs and has directed substantial fossil fuel-related business to e.

Rhode Island. A substantial portion of Citgo's fossil fuel products are or have been extracted,

refined, transported, traded, distributed, marketed, promoted, manufactured, sold, and/or

consumed in Rhode Island, from which Citgo derives and has derived substantial revenue. For

instance, Citgo has marketed, sold, and/or distributed heating oil in Rhode Island including through

the CITGO - Venezuela Heating Oil program, a heating oil assistance program. Additionally,

Citgo markets and/or has marketed gasoline and other fossil fuel products to consumers, including

through Citgo-branded petroleum service stations in Rhode Island. Citgo owns and operates an

interactive webpage that allows consumers to locate Citgo-branded gas stations in the state. Citgo

also supplied gasoline to 7-Eleven gas stations located in Rhode Island.

27. **Marathon Entities** 

Marathon Oil Company is an energy company incorporated in the State of

Ohio with its principal place of business in Houston, Texas. Marathon Oil Company is a corporate

ancestor of Marathon Oil Corporation and Marathon Petroleum Company.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

> b. Marathon Oil Corporation is a multinational energy company incorporated

in the State of Delaware and with its principal place of business in Houston, Texas. Marathon Oil

Corporation consists of multiple subsidiaries and affiliates involved in the exploration for,

extraction, production, and marketing of fossil fuel products.

Marathon Petroleum Corporation is a multinational energy company C.

incorporated in Delaware and with its principal place of business in Findlay, Ohio. Marathon

Petroleum Corporation was spun off from the operations of Marathon Oil Corporation in 2011. It

consists of multiple subsidiaries and affiliates involved in fossil fuel product refining, marketing,

retail, and transport, including both petroleum and natural gas products.

d. Marathon Oil Corporation and Marathon Petroleum Corporation control

and have controlled their companywide decisions about the quantity and extent of fossil fuel

production and sales, including those of their subsidiaries.

Marathon Oil Corporation and Marathon Petroleum Corporation control e.

and have controlled their companywide decisions about the quantity and extent of fossil fuel

production, including those of their subsidiaries.

f. Marathon Petroleum Company LP is a wholly owned subsidiary of

Marathon Petroleum Corporation that acts on Marathon Petroleum Corporation's behalf and

subject to Marathon Petroleum Corporation's control. Marathon Petroleum Company LP is

incorporated in Delaware with its principal place of business in Findlay, Ohio. Marathon

Petroleum Company LP is qualified to do business in Rhode Island. Marathon Petroleum Company

LP is engaged in the marketing of motor fuels and other refined products.

Speedway LLC is a wholly owned subsidiary of Marathon Petroleum g.

Corporation that acts on Marathon Petroleum Corporation's behalf and subject to Marathon

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

Petroleum Corporation's control. Speedway LLC is incorporated in the State of Delaware with its

principal place of business in Enon, Ohio. Speedway LLC is qualified to do business in Rhode

Island and has a registered agent for service of process in Rhode Island.

h. Defendants Marathon Oil Company, Marathon Oil Corporation, Marathon

Petroleum Corporation, Marathon Petroleum Company LP, Speedway LLC, and their

predecessors, successors, parents, subsidiaries, affiliates, and divisions, are collectively referred to

as "Marathon."

i. Marathon directs and has directed substantial fossil fuel-related business to

Rhode Island. A substantial portion of Marathon's fossil fuel products are or have been extracted,

refined, transported, traded, distributed, marketed, promoted, manufactured, sold, and/or

consumed in Rhode Island, from which Marathon derives and has derived substantial revenue. For

example, Marathon markets and/or has marketed gasoline and other fossil fuel products to

consumers, including through Speedway-branded petroleum service stations in Rhode Island.

Marathon owns and operates an interactive webpage that allow consumers to locate Speedway-

branded gas stations in the state.

28. Hess Corporation

a. Hess Corporation ("Hess") is a global, vertically integrated petroleum

exploration and extraction company incorporated in the State of Delaware with its headquarters

and principal place of business in New York, New York. Hess is qualified to do business in Rhode

Island and has a registered agent for service of process in Rhode Island. Hess was formerly known

as, did or does business as, and/or is the successor in liability to Amerada Hess Corporation,

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

WilcoHess LLC, Hess Oil Virgin Islands Corporation, Hess Energy Trading Company, LLC, and

Hartree Partners, LP.

b. Hess is engaged in the exploration, development, production,

transportation, purchase, marketing, and sale of crude oil and natural gas. Its oil and gas production

operations are located primarily in the United States, Denmark, Equatorial Guinea, Malaysia,

Thailand, and Norway. Prior to 2014, Hess also conducted extensive retail operations in its own

name and through its subsidiaries.

c. Hess controls and has controlled companywide decisions about the quantity

and extent of fossil fuel production and sales, including those of its subsidiaries.

d. Hess controls and has controlled companywide decisions related to climate

change and greenhouse gas emissions from its fossil fuel products, including those of

its subsidiaries.

e. Hess directs and has directed substantial fossil fuel-related business to

Rhode Island. A substantial portion of Hess's fossil fuel products are or have been extracted,

refined, transported, traded, distributed, marketed, promoted, manufactured, sold, and/or

consumed in Rhode Island, from which Hess derives and has derived substantial revenue. For

example, Hess markets and/or has marketed gasoline and other fossil fuel products to consumers,

including through Hess-branded petroleum service stations in Rhode Island.

29. Lukoil Pan Americas, LLC

a. Lukoil Pan Americas, LLC ("Lukoil") is a global, vertically integrated

petroleum exploration and extraction company incorporated in the State of Delaware with its

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

headquarters and principal place of business in New York, New York. Lukoil is qualified to do

business in Rhode Island and has a registered agent for service of process in Rhode Island.

b. Lukoil is engaged in the exploration, development, production,

transportation, purchase, marketing, and sale of crude oil and natural gas; gas processing; oil

refining; generation, transmission and distribution of heat and power; and manufacturing and

marketing of commodity petrochemicals. Lukoil is the ultimate parent company for

numerous subsidiaries.

Lukoil controls and has controlled companywide decisions about the C.

quantity and extent of fossil fuel production and sales, including those of its subsidiaries.

d. Lukoil controls and has controlled companywide decisions related to

climate change and greenhouse gas emissions from its fossil fuel products, including those of

its subsidiaries.

Lukoil directs and has directed substantial fossil fuel-related business to e.

Rhode Island. A substantial portion of Lukoil's fossil fuel products are or have been extracted,

refined, transported, traded, distributed, marketed, promoted, manufactured, sold, and/or

consumed in Rhode Island, from which Lukoil derives and has derived substantial revenue. For

example, Lukoil markets and/or has marketed gasoline and other fossil fuel products to consumers,

including through Lukoil-branded petroleum service stations in Rhode Island.

f. Getty Petroleum Marketing, Inc. markets and/or marketed gasoline and

petroleum products. Getty Petroleum Marketing Inc. is registered in Rhode Island as a non-resident

landlord, as the owner of at least one gas station located at 7780 Post Road, North Kingstown,

Rhode Island. At times relevant to this Complaint, Getty Petroleum Marketing, Inc. has been a

wholly owned subsidiary of Lukoil that acted on Lukoil's behalf and subject to Lukoil's control.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

During that time, Getty Petroleum Marketing leased a pipeline at the East Providence Terminal in

Rhode Island.

30. Doe Defendants: The true names and capacities, whether individual, corporate,

associate, or otherwise of Defendants Does 1 through 100, inclusive, are unknown to Plaintiff,

who therefore sues said Defendants by such fictitious names pursuant to R.I. Gen. Laws § 9-5-20.

Plaintiff is informed and believes, and on that basis alleges, that each of the fictitiously named

Defendants is responsible in some manner for the acts and occurrences herein alleged, and that

Plaintiff's damages were caused by such Defendants.

31. Relevant Non-Parties: Fossil Fuel Industry Associations: As set forthin greater

detail below, each Defendant had actual knowledge that its fossil fuel products were hazardous.

Defendants obtained knowledge of the hazards of their products independently and through their

membership and involvement in trade associations.

Each Defendant's fossil fuel promotion and marketing efforts were assisted by the 32.

trade associations described below. Acting on behalf of the Defendants, the industry associations

engaged in a long-term course of conduct to misrepresent, omit, and conceal the dangers of

Defendants' fossil fuel products.

a. The American Petroleum Institute (API): API is a national trade association

representing the oil and gas industry, formed in 1919. The following Defendants

and/or their predecessors in interest are and/or have been API members at times

relevant to this litigation: Chevron, ExxonMobil, BP, Shell, Total, Marathon, and

Hess. 10

<sup>10</sup> American Petroleum Institute, *Members* (webpage) (accessed June 18, 2018),

http://www.api.org/membership/members.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

b. The Western States Petroleum Association (WSPA): WSPA is a trade

association representing oil producers in Arizona, California, Nevada, Oregon, and

Washington. 11 Membership has included, among other entities: BP, Chevron, Shell,

and ExxonMobil.12

c. The American Fuel and Petrochemical Manufacturers (AFPM) is a national

association of petroleum and petrochemical companies, formerly known as the

National Petroleum Refiners Association. At relevant times, its members included,

but were not limited to, Chevron, Exxon, BP, Shell, Citgo, Total, and Marathon.<sup>13</sup>

d. U.S. Oil & Gas Association (USOGA) is a national trade association representing

oil and gas producers, formerly known as the Mid-Continent Oil & Gas

Association. USOGA's membership has included BP, Chevron, Citgo, Exxon,

Shell, Marathon, and Hess.14

e. Western Oil & Gas Association (WOGA) was a California nonprofit trade

association representing the oil and gas industries, consisting of over 75 member

companies. Its members included companies and individual responsible for more

than 65% of petroleum production and 90% of petroleum refining and marketing

Western States Petroleum Association, *About* (webpage) (accessed June 18, 2018), https://www.wspa.org/about.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>12</sup> Western States Petroleum Association, *Member Companies* (webpage) (accessed June 27, 2018), https://www.wspa.org/about.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>13</sup> American Fuel and Petrochemical Manufacturers, *Membership Directory* (webpage) (accessed June 18, 2018), https://www.afpm.org/membership-directory.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>14</sup> See, e.g., Louisiana Mid-Continent Oil & Gas Association, *Member Companies* (webpage) (accessed June 18, 2018), http://www.lmoga.com/mcmbers/member-companies. USOGA's membership is divided among its four subsidiary divisions.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

in the Western United States. 15 WOGA membership likely included, but was not

limited to, defendants Chevron, Exxon, and Shell. 16 Other fossil fuel company

members of WOGA may have included, but were not limited to ConocoPhillips,

Champlin Petroleum Company (Anadarko) 17 and Reserve Oil & Gas Company. 18

The Information Council for the Environment (ICE): ICE was formed by coal

companies and their allies, including Western Fuels Association and the National

Coal Association. Associated companies included Pittsburg and Midway Coal

Mining (Chevron).

g. The Global Climate Coalition (GCC): GCC was an industry group formed to

oppose greenhouse gas emission reduction policies and the Kyoto Protocol. It was

founded in 1989 shortly after the first Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change

meeting was held, and disbanded in 2001. Founding members included the National

Association of Manufacturers, the National Coal Association, the Edison Electric

Institute, and the United States Chamber of Commerce. The GCC's early individual

corporate members included Amoco (BP), API, Chevron, Exxon, Ford, Shell, and

Texaco (Chevron). Over its existence other members and funders included ARCO

(BP), and the Western Fuels Association. The coalition also operated for several

years out of the National Association of Manufacturers' offices.

<sup>15</sup> Am. Petroleum Inst. v. Knecht, 456 F. Supp. 889, 894 n.2 (C.D. Cal. 1978), aff'd, 609 F.2d 1306 (9th Cir. 1979).

<sup>16</sup> See id. at 894 n.3.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>17</sup> Hereinafter, parenthetical references to Defendants indicate corporate ancestry and/or affiliation.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>18</sup> See Am. Petroleum Inst., supra note 15, 456 F. Supp. at 894 n.3.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

#### III. **AGENCY**

At all times herein mentioned, each of the Defendants was the agent, servant, 33. partner, aider and abettor, co-conspirator, and/or joint venturer of each of the remaining Defendants herein and was at all times operating and acting within the purpose and scope of said agency, service, employment, partnership, conspiracy, and joint venture and rendered substantial assistance and encouragement to the other Defendants, knowing that their conduct was wrongful and/or constituted a breach of duty.

#### IV. **JURISDICTION AND VENUE**

- Each Defendant named here maintains sufficient minimum contacts with Rhode 34. Island, as described above, such that this Court's exercise of jurisdiction over it is not contrary to the provisions of the constitution or laws of the United States, and this Court therefore has jurisdiction pursuant to R.I. Gen. Laws § 9-5-33.
- 35. The Providence County Superior Court is a court of general jurisdiction and therefore has subject matter jurisdiction over this action. Because the amount in controversy exceeds \$10,000, this Court has exclusive original jurisdiction pursuant to R.I. Gen. Laws  $\S 8-2-14(a)$ .
- Venue is proper in Providence County pursuant to R.I. Gen. Laws § 9-4-2 because 36. this matter concerns rights and interests in real property lying within this County; and pursuant to R.I. Gen. Laws § 9-4-5 because some of the Defendants maintain operations and may be found in this County.

#### V. FACTUAL BACKGROUND

#### A. Global Warming—Observed Effects and Known Cause

Warming of the climate system is unequivocal, and since the 1950s, many of the 37. observed changes to the climate system are unprecedented over decades to millennia. Globally,

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

the atmosphere and ocean have warmed, sea level has risen, and the amounts of snow and ice have

diminished, thereby altering hydrologic systems. 19 As a result, extreme weather events have

increased, including, but not limited to, heat waves, droughts, and extreme precipitation events.<sup>20</sup>

38. Ocean and land surface temperatures have increased at a rapid pace during the late

20th and early 21st centuries:

a. 2016 was the hottest year on record by globally averaged surface

temperatures, exceeding mid-20th century mean ocean and land surface

temperatures by approximately 1.69°F.21 Eight of the twelve months in 2016

were hotter by globally averaged surface temperatures than those respective

months in any previous year. October, November, and December 2016

showed the second hottest average surface temperatures for those months,

second only to temperatures recorded in 2015.<sup>22</sup>

b. The Earth's hottest month ever recorded was February 2016, followed

immediately by the second hottest month on record, March 2016.<sup>23</sup>

c. The second hottest year on record by globally averaged surface temperatures

was 2015, and the third hottest was 2017.24

<sup>19</sup> IPCC, Climate Change 2014: Synthesis Report, supra note 3, at 40.

<sup>21</sup> NOAA, *Global Climate Report – Annual 2017*, https://www.ncdc.noaa.gov/sotc/global/201713; NASA, "NASA, NOAA Data Show 2016 Warmest Year on Record Globally" (press release) (Jan. 18, 2017), https://www.nasa.gov/press-release/nasa-noaa-data-show-2016-warmest-year-on-record-globally.

<sup>23</sup> Jugal K. Patel, "How 2016 Became Earth's Hottest Year on Record," N.Y. TIMES (Jan. 18, 2017), https://www.nytimes.com/interactive/2017/01/18/science/earth/2016-hottest-year-on-record.html.

<sup>24</sup> NOAA, Global Climate Report – Annual 2017, supra note 21.

<sup>20</sup> Id. at 8.

<sup>22</sup> Id.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

d. The ten hottest years on record by globally averaged surface temperature have all occurred since 1998,<sup>25</sup> and sixteen of the seventeen hottest years have

occurred since 2001.26

e. Each of the past three decades has been warmer by average surface

temperature than any preceding decade on record.<sup>27</sup>

f. The period between 1983 and 2012 was likely the warmest 30-year period in

the Northern Hemisphere since approximately 700 AD.<sup>28</sup>

39. The average global surface and ocean temperature in 2016 was approximately 1.7°F

warmer than the 20th century baseline, which is the greatest positive anomaly observed since at

least 1880.29 The increase in hotter temperatures and more frequent positive anomalies during the

Great Acceleration is occurring both globally and locally, including in Rhode Island. The graph

below shows the increase in global land and ocean temperature anomalies since 1880, as measured

against the 1910-2000 global average temperature.30

25 Id

<sup>26</sup> NASA, "NASA, NOAA Data Show 2016 Warmest Year on Record Globally" (press release) (Jan. 18, 2017), https://www.nasa.gov/press-release/nasa-noaa-data-show-2016-warmest-year-on-record-globally.

<sup>27</sup> IPCC Climate Change 2014: Synthesis Report, supra note 3, 2.

28 7

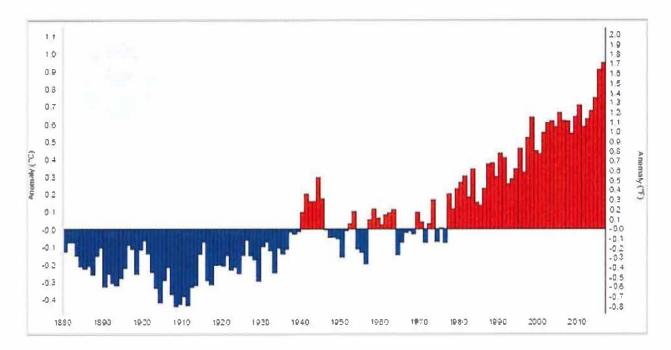
<sup>29</sup> NOAA, National Centers for Environmental Information, *Climate at a Glance (Global Time Series)* (June 2017), https://www.ncdc.noaa.gov/cag/time-series/global/globe/land\_ocean/ytd/12/1880-2016.

30 Id.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

Fig. 1: Global Land and Ocean Temperature Anomalies, January - December



- 40. The mechanism by which human activity causes global warming and climate change is well established: ocean and atmospheric warming is overwhelmingly caused by anthropogenic greenhouse gas emissions.<sup>31</sup>
- When emitted, greenhouse gases trap heat within the Earth's atmosphere that would otherwise radiate into space.
- 42. Greenhouse gases are largely byproducts of humans combusting fossil fuels to produce energy and using fossil fuels to create petrochemical products.
- 43. Human activity, particularly greenhouse gas emissions, is the primary cause of global warming and its associated effects on Earth's climate.
- 44. Prior to World War II, most anthropogenic CO<sub>2</sub> emissions were caused by land-use practices, such as forestry and agriculture, which altered the ability of the land and global biosphere

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>31</sup> IPCC, Climate Change 2014: Synthesis Report, supra note 3, at 4.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

to absorb CO<sub>2</sub> from the atmosphere; the impacts of such activities on Earth's climate were relatively minor. Since the beginning of the Great Acceleration, however, both the annual rate and total volume of anthropogenic CO<sub>2</sub> emissions have increased enormously following the advent of major uses of oil, gas, and coal. The graph below shows that while CO<sub>2</sub> emissions attributable to forestry and other land-use change have remained relatively constant, total emissions attributable to fossil fuels have increased dramatically since the 1950s.<sup>32</sup>

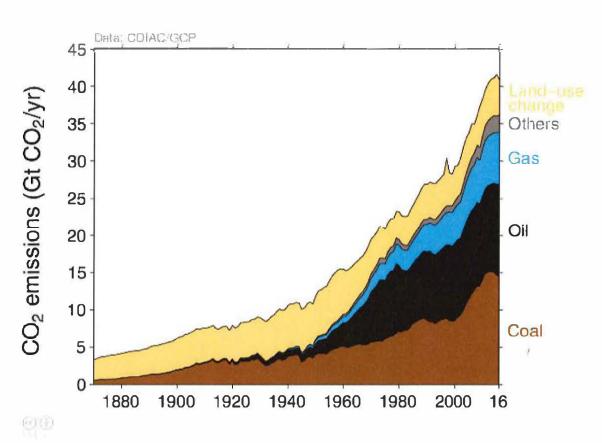


Fig. 2: Total Annual Carbon Dioxide Emissions by Source, 1860–2016

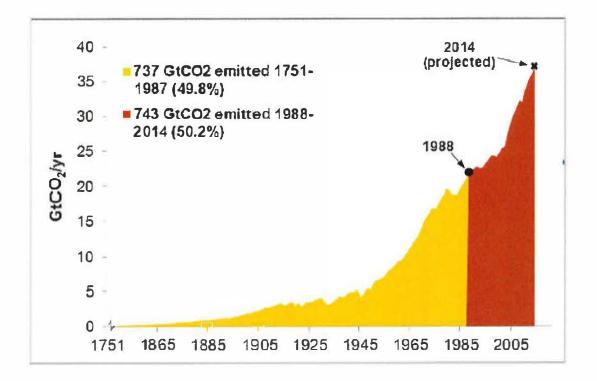
<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>32</sup> Global Carbon Project, Global Carbon Budget 2017 (Nov. 13, 2017), http://www.globalcarbonproject.org/carbonbudget/17/files/GCP\_CarbonBudget\_2017.pdf (citing CDIAC; R.A. Houghton & Alexander A. Nassikas, Global and Regional Fluxes of Carbon from Land Use and Land Cover Change 1850–2015, 31 GLOBAL BIOCHEMICAL CYCLES 3, 456 (Feb. 2017)).

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

45. As human reliance on fossil fuels for industrial and mechanical processes has increased, so too have greenhouse gas emissions, especially of CO<sub>2</sub>. The Great Acceleration is marked by a massive increase in the annual rate of fossil fuel emissions: more than half of all cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> emissions have occurred since 1988.<sup>33</sup> The rate of CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from fossil fuels and industry, moreover, has increased threefold since the 1960s, and by more than 60% since 1990.<sup>34</sup> The graph below illustrates the increasing rate of global CO<sub>2</sub> emissions since the industrial era began.<sup>35</sup>

Fig. 3: Cumulative Annual Anthropogenic Carbon Dioxide Emissions, 1751-2014



<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>33</sup> R. J. Andres et al., *supra* note 6, at 1851.

 $<sup>^{34}</sup>$  C. Le Quéré et al., *supra* note 4, at 630 ("Global CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from fossil fuels and industry have increased every decade from an average of  $3.1\pm0.2$  GtC/yr in the 1960s to an average of  $9.3\pm0.5$  GtC/yr during 2006-2015.").

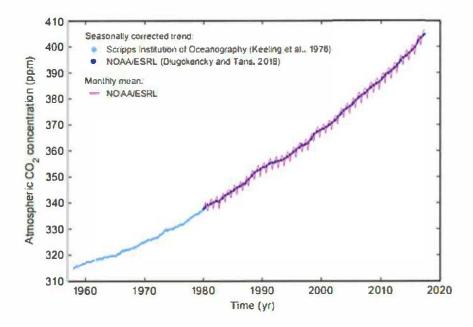
<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>35</sup> Peter Frumhoff et al., *The Climate Responsibilities of Industrial Carbon Producers*, 132 CLIMATIC CHANGE 157, 164 (2015).

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

46. Because of the increased use of fossil fuel products, concentrations of greenhouse gases in the atmosphere are now at a level unprecedented in at least 800,000 years.<sup>36</sup> The graph below illustrates the nearly 30% increase in atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentration above pre-Industrial levels since 1960.<sup>37</sup>

Fig. 4: Atmospheric Carbon Dioxide Concentration in Parts Per Million, 1960-2017



## B. Sea Level Rise—Known Causes and Observed Effects

47. Sea level rise is the physical consequence of (a) the thermal expansion of ocean waters as they warm; (b) increased mass loss from land-based glaciers that are melting as ambient air temperature increases; and (c) the shrinking of land-based ice sheets due to increasing ocean

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>36</sup> IPCC, Climate Change 2014: Synthesis Report, supra note 3, at 4.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>37</sup> C. Le Quéré et al., *Global Carbon Budget 2017*, 10 EARTH SYST. SCI. DATA 405, 408 (Mar. 2018)).

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

and air temperature.38

48. Of the increase in energy that has accumulated in the Earth's atmosphere between

1971 and 2010, more than 90% is stored in the oceans.<sup>39</sup>

49. Anthropogenic forcing, in the form of greenhouse gas pollution largely from the

production, use, and combustion of fossil fuel products, is the dominant cause of global mean sea

level rise since 1970, explaining at least 70% of the sea level rise observed between 1970 and

2000.<sup>40</sup> Natural radiative forcing—that is, causes of climate change not related to human activity—

"makes essentially zero contribution [to observed sea level rise] over the twentieth century (2%

over the period 1900-2005)."41

50. Anthropogenic greenhouse gas pollution is the dominant factor in each of the

independent causes of sea level rise, including the increase in ocean thermal expansion, 42 in glacier

mass loss, and in more negative surface mass balance from the ice sheets. 43

51. There is a well-defined relation between cumulative emissions of CO<sub>2</sub> and

committed global mean sea level. This relation, moreover, holds proportionately for committed

regional sea level rise.44

52. Nearly 100% of the sea level rise from any projected greenhouse gas emissions

38 NOAA, Is Sea Level Rising? (webpage) (last updated June 25, 2018),

http://oceanservice.noaa.gov/facts/sealevel.html.

<sup>39</sup> IPCC, Climate Change 2014: Synthesis Report, supra note 3, at 4.

<sup>40</sup> Aimée B. A. Slangen, et al., Anthropogenic Forcing Dominates Global Mean Sea-Level Rise

Since 1970, 6 NATURE CLIMATE CHANGE 701, 701 (2016).

41 Id.

42 Id.

43 Id.

<sup>44</sup> Peter U. Clark, et al., Consequences of Twenty-First-Century Policy for Multi-Millennial

Climate and Sea-Level Change, 6 NATURE CLIMATE CHANGE 360, 365 (2016).

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

scenario will persist for at least 10,000 years. 45 This owes to the long residence time of CO2 in the

atmosphere that sustains temperature increases, and inertia in the climate system. 46

Anthropogenic greenhouse gas pollution caused the increased frequency and 53.

severity of extreme sea level events (temporary sea level height increases due to storm surges or

extreme tides, exacerbated by elevated baseline sea level) observed during the Great

Acceleration. 47 The incidence and magnitude of extreme sea level events has increased globally

since 1970.48 The impacts of such events, which generally occur with large storms, high tidal

events, offshore low-pressure systems associated with high winds, or the confluence of any of

these factors. 49 are exacerbated with higher average sea level, which functionally raises the

baseline for the destructive impact of extreme weather and tidal events. Indeed, the magnitude and

frequency of extreme sea level events can occur in the absence of increased intensity of storm

events, given the increased average elevation from which flooding and inundation events begin.

These effects, and others, significantly and adversely affect Rhode Island, with increased severity

in the future.

Historical greenhouse gas emissions alone through 2000 will cause a global mean 54.

sea level rise of at least 7.4 feet.<sup>50</sup> Additional greenhouse gas emissions from 2001–2015 have

caused approximately 10 additional feet of committed sea level rise. Even immediate and

45 Id. at 361.

46 Id. at 360.

<sup>47</sup> IPCC, Climate Change 2013: Summary for Policymakers, 7 Table SPM.1 (2013),

https://www.ipcc.ch/pdf/assessment-report/ar5/wg1/WGIAR5 SPM brochure en.pdf.

<sup>48</sup> IPCC, Thomas F. Stocker et al., Climate Change 2013: The Physical Science Basis, Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change, Cambridge University Press, 290 (2013),

http://www.ipcc.ch/report/ar5/wg1.

49 Id.

<sup>50</sup> Peter U. Clark et al., *supra* note 44, at 365.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

permanent cessation of all additional anthropogenic greenhouse gas emissions would not prevent

the eventual inundation of land at elevations between current average mean sea level and 17.4 feet

of elevation in the absence of adaptive measures.

55. The relationship between anthropogenic CO<sub>2</sub> emissions and committed sea level

rise is nearly linear and always positive. For emissions, including future emissions, from the year

2001, the relation is approximately 0.25 inches of committed sea level rise per 1 GtCO<sub>2</sub> released.

For the period 1965 to 2000, the relation is approximately 0.05 inches of committed sea level rose

per 1 GtCO<sub>2</sub> released. For the period 1965 to 2015, normal use of Defendants' fossil fuel products

caused a substantial portion of committed sea level rise. Each and every additional unit of CO<sub>2</sub>

emitted from the use of Defendants' fossil fuel products will add to the sea level rise already

committed to the geophysical system.

56. Projected onshore impacts associated with rising sea temperature and water level

include, but are not limited to, increases in flooding and erosion; increases in the occurrence,

persistence, and severity of storm surges; infrastructure inundation; saltwater intrusion in

groundwater; public and private property damage; and pollution associated with damaged

wastewater infrastructure. All of these effects significantly and adversely affect Rhode Island.

57. Sea level rise has already taken grave tolls on inhabited coastlines. For instance, the

U.S. National Oceanic and Atmospheric Administration ("NOAA") estimates that nuisance

flooding occurs from 300% to 900% more frequently within U.S. coastal communities today than

just 50 years ago. 51

58. Nationwide, more than three quarters (76%) of flood days caused by high water

levels from sea level rise between 2005 and 2014 (2,505 of the 3,291 flood days) would not have

<sup>51</sup> NOAA, Is Sea Level Rising?, supra note 38.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

happened but for human-caused climate change. More than two-thirds (67%) of flood days since

1950 would not have happened without the sea level rise caused by increasing greenhouse

gas emissions.52

59. Regional expressions of sea level rise will differ from the global mean, and are

especially influenced by changes in ocean and atmospheric dynamics, as well as the gravitational,

deformational, and rotational effects of the loss of glaciers and ice sheets.<sup>53</sup> Over the past half

century, sea levels in the Northeast have been increasing 3 to 4 times faster than the global average

rate.54 Rhode Island is experiencing and will continue to experience greater sea level rise than the

global average, due to several factors including changes in ocean circulation as a result of climate

change and land subsistence.55

60. Rhode Island has experienced over 10 inches of sea level rise since 1930, averaging

over an inch per decade. 56 The mean annual rate of sea level rise has increased in recent decades

and will continue to rise significantly. According to NOAA, Rhode Island could experience 9 feet

of sea level rise by 2100, along with substantial increase in the frequency of nuisance

tidal flooding.<sup>57</sup>

61. Rhode Island's topography, geography, and land use patterns make it particularly

susceptible to injuries from sea level rise. Rhode Island has substantial public assets in 21 coastal

<sup>52</sup> Climate Central, Sea Level Rise Upping Ante on 'Sunny Day' Floods (Oct. 17, 2016), http://www.climatecentral.org/news/climate-change-increases-sunny-day-floods-20784.

<sup>54</sup>Rhode Island Sea Grant et al., *Sea Level Rise in Rhode Island: Trends and Impacts*, 2 (Jan 2013) http://www.beachsamp.org/wp-content/uploads/2016/09/climate SLR factsheet2013.pdf

<sup>55</sup> Rhode Island Department of Health, *Rhode Island Climate Change and Resiliency Report*, 10 (2015), http://health.ri.gov/publications/reports/ClimateChangeAndHealthResiliency.pdf.

<sup>56</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, 12 (July 2018).

57 Id.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>53</sup> Peter U. Clark et al., supra note 44, at 364.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

> municipalities along its 400 miles of coastline. 58 Twenty Rhode Island municipalities have acreage lving below the floodplain.<sup>59</sup>

> 62. Without Defendants' fossil fuel-related greenhouse gas pollution, current sea level rise would have been far less than the observed sea level rise to date. 60 Similarly, committed sea level rise that will occur in the future would also be far less.<sup>61</sup>

## C. Warming Air Temperatures—Known Causes and Observed Effects

- 63. Carbon dioxide and other greenhouse gases are impairing the radiation of heat back into the atmosphere. This is slowly driving up temperatures, especially nighttime lows, as the concentration of greenhouse gases thickens.<sup>62</sup>
- As the Earth's surface temperature warms, there is not only an overall increase in 64. average temperature but also in frequency of extremely warm temperatures, corresponding with a decrease in frequency of extremely cold temperatures. The following graph illustrates the statistical shift in expected average and extreme temperatures due to anthropogenic global warming.63

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>58</sup> Final Report: "Special House Commission to Study Economic Risk Due to Flooding and Sea Level Rise," 6, 32 (May 12, 2016),

http://www.rilin.state.ri.us/commissions/fsrcomm/commdocs/20160512%20Economic%20Risk %20Due%20to%20Flooding%20and%20Sea%20Level%20Rise%20-%20final.pdf.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>59</sup> Id. at 6.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>60</sup> Robert E. Kopp et al., Temperature-driven Global Sea-level Variability in the Common Era, 113 PROCEEDINGS OF THE NATIONAL ACADEMY OF SCIENCES, No. 11, E1434-E1441, E1438 (2016), http://www.pnas.org/content/113/11/E1434.full.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>61</sup> Peter U. Clark et al., *supra* note 44, at 365.

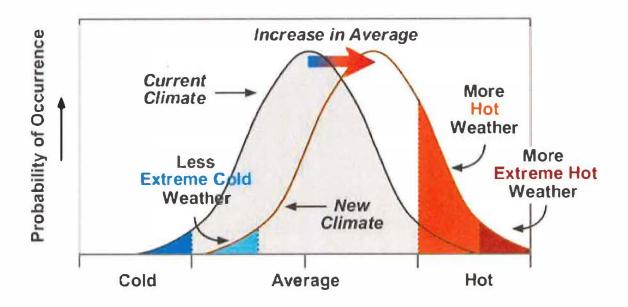
<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>62</sup> IPCC, Thomas F. Stocker et al., Climate Change 2013: The Physical Science Basis, supra note

<sup>63</sup> IPCC, Fourth Assessment Report: Climate Change 2007: Working Group I: The Physical Science, Basis Box TS.5, Figure 1, https://www.ipcc.ch/publications and data/ar4/wg1/en/boxts-5-figure-l.html.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

Fig. 5: Effect of Mean Temperature on Extreme Temperature Occurrence



- 65. Record-breaking high temperatures are now outnumbering record lows by an average decadal ratio of 2:1 across the United States.<sup>64</sup> This represents an increase from approximately 1.09 high temperature records for every one low temperature record in the 1950s, and 1.36 high temperature records for every one low temperature record in the 1990s.<sup>65</sup>
- 66. Rhode Island has already begun experiencing a substantial increase in extreme heat days. As the figure below shows, 1950s and 1960s, an average summer included 54 days with a heat index above 80 degrees. By the 1990s and 2000s, that average had climbed to nearly 64 days. In 2010 through 2014, that number rose to 71 days above 80 degrees. 66

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>64</sup> Gerald A. Meehl et al., *Relative Increase of Record High Maximum Temperatures Compared to Record Low Minimum Temperatures in the U.S.*, GEOPHYSICAL RESEARCH LETTERS, L23701 at 3 (2009).

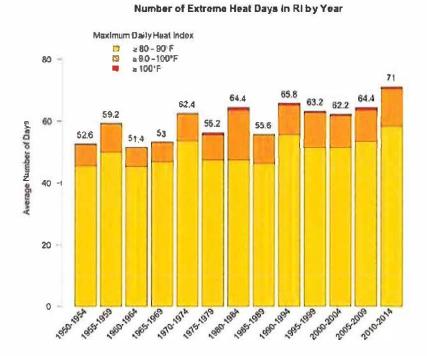
<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>65</sup> See Climate Signals, Record High Temps vs. Record Low Temps (last accessed June 27, 2018), http://www.climatesignals.org/data/record-high-temps-vs-record-low-temps.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>66</sup> "Number of 80°-plus days rising steadily in RI," BROWN UNIVERSITY NEWS (Sept. 8, 2015), https://news.brown.edu/articles/2015/09/temperature.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

Fig. 6: Number of Extreme Heat Days Per Year in Rhode Island, 1950-2014



Melissa Eliot/Brown University

- 67. Heatwaves are prolonged periods with excessive ambient temperatures, often (but not necessarily) defined with reference to historical temperatures at a given locale. Since as early as the 1950s, increases in the duration, intensity, and especially the frequency of heatwaves have been detected over many regions,<sup>67</sup> including the eastern United States.<sup>68</sup>
- 68. With future emissions, the annual average number of extreme heat days and heat waves will continue to increase substantially. For instance, under a moderate rising emissions scenario, the ratio of record high maximum to record low minimum temperatures in the United

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>67</sup> S.E. Perkins-Kirkpatrick & P.B. Gibson, *Changes in Regional Heatwave Characteristics as a Function of Increasing Global Temperature*, SCIENTIFIC REPORTS, 7:12256, 1 (2017).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>68</sup> Noah. S. Diffenbaugh & Moestasim Ashfaq, *Intensification of Hot Extremes in the United States*, 37 GEOPHYSICAL RESEARCH LETTERS L15701 (2010).

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

States will continue to increase, reaching ratios of about 20:1 by 2050, and roughly 50:1 by 2100.<sup>69</sup> Even under a pathway of lower greenhouse gas emissions, average annual temperatures are projected to most likely exceed historical record levels by the middle of the 21st century.<sup>70</sup>

69. Because of Rhode Island's urban infrastructure, increased temperatures will add to the heat load of buildings and exacerbate existing urban heat islands, adding to the risks of high ambient temperatures.

## D. Disruption to the Hydrologic Cycle—Known Causes and Observed Effects

The "hydrologic cycle" describes the temporal and spatial movement of water through oceans, land, and the atmosphere. The vapotranspiration is the process by which water on the Earth's surface turns to vapor and is absorbed into the atmosphere. The vast majority of evapotranspiration is due to the sun's energy heating water molecules, resulting in evaporation. Plants also draw water into the atmosphere from soil through transpiration. Volcanoes, sublimation (the process by which solid water changes to water vapor), and human activity also contribute to atmospheric moisture. As water vapor rises through the atmosphere and reaches cooler air, it becomes more likely to condense and fall back to Earth as precipitation.

71. Upon reaching Earth's surface as precipitation, water may take several different paths. It can be reevaporated into the atmosphere; seep into the ground as soil moisture or

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>69</sup> Gerald A. Meehl et al., supra note 64, at 3.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>70</sup> NOAA, National Centers for Environmental Information, *Climate at a Glance (Global Time Series)* (June 2017), https://www.ncdc.noaa.gov/cag/time-series/global/globe/land\_ocean/ytd/12/1880-2016.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>71</sup> NASA Earth Observatory, *The Water Cycle*, (webpage) (accessed June 27, 2018), https://earthobservatory.nasa.gov/Features/Water/page1.php.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>72</sup> See USGS, *The Water Cycle: Evaporation* (webpage) (accessed June 27, 2018), https://water.usgs.gov/edu/watercycleevaporation.html.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>73</sup> NASA Earth Observatory, *The Water Cycle*, *supra* note 71.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

groundwater; run off into rivers and streams; or stop temporarily as snowpack or ice. It is during

these phases, when water is available at or near the Earth's surface, that water is captured for use

by humans.

Anthropogenic global warming caused by Defendants' fossil fuel products is 72.

disrupting and will continue to disrupt the hydrologic cycle in Rhode Island by changing

evapotranspiration patterns. 74 As the lower atmosphere becomes warmer, evaporation rates have

and will continue to increase, resulting in an increase in the amount of moisture circulating

throughout the lower atmosphere. As the Earth's surface temperature has increased, so has

evaporation. 75 For every 1.8°F of anthropogenic global warming, the atmosphere's capacity to hold

water vapor increases by 7%. <sup>76</sup> Thus, anthropogenic global warming has increased substantially

the total volume of water vapor in the atmosphere at any given time.<sup>77</sup>

An observed consequence of higher water vapor concentrations is a shift toward 73.

increased frequency of intense precipitation events, mainly over land areas. Furthermore, because

of warmer temperatures, more precipitation is falling as rain rather than snow. These changes affect

both the quantity and quality of water resources available to both human and ecological systems,

including in Rhode Island.

74 Id.

75 Id.

<sup>76</sup> IPCC, Thomas F. Stocker et al., Climate Change 2013: The Physical Science Basis, supra note

77 NASA Earth Observatory, The Water Cycle, supra note 71.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

> 74. As a result of anthropogenic climate change, Rhode Island has experienced and will

> experience increased precipitation extremes, leading to both increased frequency of intense

precipitation events and extremely dry periods. 78

**Extreme Precipitation** i.

75. Global warming has contributed and will contribute to more intense and wetter

precipitation events, now and into the future. Average annual precipitation in Providence, Rhode

Island, has increased by 0.4 inches per decade since 1895. Intense rainfall events (heaviest 1%

of all daily events from 1901 to 2012 in New England) increased 71% between 1958 and 2000.80

Climate models project that annual precipitation will continue to increase by up to three inches per

decade locally and that more precipitation will fall during intense storms.<sup>81</sup>

76. Over the past 80 years, Rhode Island has experienced a significant increase in both

flood frequency and flood severity. Along with most of southern New England, the State has

experienced a doubling of the frequency of flooding and an increase in the magnitude of flood

events. 82 Rhode Island experienced more extreme precipitation events between 2005 and 2014

than any prior decade in the State's history. 83

<sup>78</sup> SafeWater RI, Ensuring Water for Rhode Island's Future, 11 (July 2013), http://www.health. ri.gov/publications/reports/2013EnsuringSafeWaterForRhodeIslandsFuture.pdf.

<sup>79</sup> Radley Horton et al., CLIMATE CHANGE IMPACTS IN THE UNITED STATES, Ch. 16: Northeast 373 (2014),

http://s3.amazonaws.com/nca2014/low/NCA3 Full Report 16 Northeast LowRes.pdf.

80 Id

81 Narragansett Bay Estuary Program, State of Narragansett Bay and Its Watershed Summary Report, 21 (2017), http://nbep.org/01/wp-content/uploads/2017/10/State-of-Narragansett-Bayand-Its-Watershed-Summary-Report.pdf.

82 Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 15.

83 NOAA National Centers for Environmental Information, State Summaries 149-RI, "Rhode Island, "1 (2017), http://climatechange.ri.gov/documents/noaa-climate-rhode-island-statesummary.pdf.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

> 77. Due to anthropogenic climate change, seasonality of precipitation will shift so that

more precipitation occurs during winter, as rain, and less during summer.<sup>84</sup>

78. Tropical cyclone rainfall rates will increase in the future due to anthropogenic

warming and accompanying increase in atmospheric moisture content. Models project an increase

on the order of 10-15% for rainfall rates averaged within about 100 km of the storm for a 2°C

global warming scenario. The intensity of tropical cyclones will also increase

by 1 to 10% according to model projections for a 2°C global warming.85 Increased intensity of

storms means that the destructive potential per storm increases.<sup>86</sup>

79. Heavy precipitation events (defined as rainfall equal to or greater than the historical

95th percentile) will significantly increase in frequency at least through the year 2100.87

ii. Drought

80. Drought is a period of moisture deficit defined either by a deficiency in the amount

or timing of precipitation relative to a reference period ("meteorological drought"), or by a

shortage of water supply for specific human, ecological, or other uses ("hydrologic drought").

Drought originates from a deficiency in precipitation and/or an elevation of temperature (and

<sup>84</sup> Narragansett Bay Estuary Program, *supra* note 81, at 21.

85 Princeton University Geophysical Fluid Dynamics Laboratory, "Global Warming and Hurricanes" (website) (last revised June 6, 2018), https://www.gfdl.noaa.gov/global-warming-

and-hurricancs.

86 Id

87 Xiang Gao et al., 21st Century Changes in U.S. Heavy Precipitation Frequency Based on Resolved Atmospheric Patterns, MIT Joint Program on the Science and Policy of Global Change:

Report 302, 15 (2016).

Case Number: PC-2018-4716

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

therefore evaporation) relative to normal conditions, resulting in a water shortage for an activity,

group, or ecological use.88

81. As rising temperatures lead to greater rainfall variability, Rhode Island will begin

to experience more frequent seasonal droughts in the summer and fall.89

82. As annual rainfall concentrates into a shorter time span, the annual dry period is

growing longer, resulting in conditions of moisture deficiency over longer periods. Even in the

absence of substantial changes in average precipitation in the State, precipitation will fall in a

shorter time span and therefore be less susceptible to retention and use.

83. Thus, future droughts in the State will be more severe than historical droughts, with

an attendant exacerbation of drought impacts.

E. Ocean Warming and Acidification—Known Causes and Observed Effects

84. The ocean has played an unparalleled role in response to climate change, storing

approximately 93% of the excess heat energy over the last 50 years. 90

85. As the atmospheric greenhouse gas concentrations increase, the water in

Narragansett Bay is getting warmer and more acidic. Over the past 50 years, the average surface

temperature of the Bay has increased 1.4° to 1.6°C (2.5° to 2.9°F). Winter water temperatures in

the Bay have increased even more, from 1.6° to 2.0°C (2.9° to 3.6°F).91

88 See, e.g., Donald A. Wilhite & Michael H. Glantz, Understanding the Drought Phenomenon:

The Role of Definitions, Drought Mitigation Center Faculty Publications 20 (1985)

89 Rhode Island Department of Health, Rhode Island Climate Change and Resiliency Report,

supra note 55, at 10.

90 IPCC, Observations: Oceans, Ch. 3 260, https://www.ipcc.ch/pdf/assessment-

report/ar5/wg1/WG1AR5 Chapter03 FINAL.pdf.

<sup>91</sup> R.W. Fulweiler et al., Whole truths vs. half truths – And a search for clarity in long-term water temperature records, 157 ESTUARINE, COASTAL AND SHELF SCIENCE A1–A6 (May 2015),

https://www.sciencedirect.com/science/article/pii/S0272771415000426.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

> 86. Due to increased water temperatures among other factors, iconic cold-water fishery

species such as cod, red hake, and winter flounder are being increasingly displaced by scup and

black sea bass. Overtime, Narragansett Bay is expected to increasingly resemble that of a more

southerly, mid-Atlantic estuary with associated shifts in species that are iconic in southern New

England's culture.92

87. Uptake of carbon dioxide is also causing changes to ocean chemistry, including in

Narragansett Bay, by changing the pH to be more acidic. 93 Ocean acidification, is expected to

continue as global warming progresses.<sup>94</sup> Increased ocean acidity makes the formation and

maintenance of shells and other calcareous structure by bivalves and other shellfish more

energetically expensive or even impossible.<sup>95</sup>

Public Health Impacts of Anthropogenic Global Warming F.

88. Sea level rise, increased air temperatures and changes to the hydrologic cycle

associated with anthropogenic climate change have resulted and will result in public health impacts

for the state of Rhode Island.

89. Extreme weather events, such as hurricanes and inland flooding, have immediate

health consequences, including danger to personal safety and longer-term consequences, including

social and economic disruption, population displacement, and mental trauma.<sup>96</sup>

<sup>92</sup> Narragansett Bay Estuary Program, *supra* note 81, at 24.

93 Id. at 45.

94 Id.

95 Id. at 46.

<sup>96</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 63.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

90. Extreme heat-induced public health impacts in the State will result in increased risk

of heat-related illnesses such as heat exhaustion and dehydration, increased hospitalizations,

and death.97

91. Increased heat also intensifies the photochemical reactions that produce smog,

ground level ozone, and fine particulate matter (PM2.5), which contribute to and exacerbate

respiratory disease in children and adults. Increased heat and CO2 enhance the growth of plants

that produce pollen, which are associated with allergies.<sup>98</sup>

92. In addition, the warming climate system will create disease-related public health

impacts in the State, including but not limited to, increased incidence of cyanobacteria blooms

(toxic alga) in aquatic systems and vector-borne disease with migration of animal and insect

disease vectors.99

93. Public health impacts of these climatological changes are likely to be

disproportionately borne by communities made vulnerable by geographic, racial, or

income disparities.

G. Attribution

94. "Carbon factors" analysis, devised by the International Panel on Climate Change

(IPCC), the United Nations International Energy Agency, and the U.S. Environmental Protection

Agency, quantifies the amount of CO<sub>2</sub> emissions attributable to a unit of raw fossil fuel extracted

from the Earth. 100 Emissions factors for oil, coal, liquid natural gas, and natural gas are different

<sup>97</sup> Rhode Island Department of Health, *Rhode Island Climate Change and Resiliency Report*, *supra* note 55, at 14.

98 Id. at 25-26.

<sup>99</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 15.

100 See Richard Heede, Tracing Anthropogenic Carbon Dioxide and Methane Emissions to Fossil

Fuel and Cement Producers, 1854-2010, 122 CLIMATIC CHANGE 229, 232-33 (2014).

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

for each material but are nevertheless known and quantifiable for each. 101 This analysis accounts

for the use of Defendants' fossil fuel products, including non-combustion purposes that sequester

CO<sub>2</sub> rather than emit it (e.g., asphalt production).

95. Defendants' historical and current fossil fuel extraction and production records are

publicly available in various fora. These include university and public library collections, company

websites, company reports filed with the U.S. Securities and Exchange Commission, company

histories, and other sources. The cumulative CO<sub>2</sub> and methane emissions attributable to

fossil fuel products were calculated by reference to such publicly

available documents.

96. Cumulative carbon analysis allows an accurate calculation of net annual CO<sub>2</sub> and

methane emissions attributable to each Defendant by quantifying the amount and type of fossil

fuels products each Defendant extracted and placed into the stream of commerce, and multiplying

those quantities by each fossil fuel product's carbon factor.

97. Defendants, through their extraction, promotion, marketing, and sale of their fossil

fuel products, caused over 14.5% of global fossil fuel product-related CO<sub>2</sub> between 1965 and 2015,

with contributions currently continuing unabated. This constitutes a substantial portion of all such

emissions in history, and the attendant historical, projected, and committed sea level rise and

disruptions to the hydrologic cycle associated therewith.

98. By quantifying CO<sub>2</sub> and methane pollution attributable to Defendants by and

through their fossil fuel products, ambient air and ocean temperature, sea level, and hydrologic

cycle responses to those emissions are also calculable, and can be attributed to Defendants on an

individual and aggregate basis. Individually and collectively, Defendants' through their control of

101 See, e.g., id.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

the extraction, sale, and promotion of their fossil fuel products are responsible for substantial

increases in ambient (surface) temperature, ocean temperature, sea level, droughts, extreme

precipitation events, heat waves, and other adverse impacts on Rhode Island described herein.

99. Anthropogenic CO<sub>2</sub> emissions have caused a substantial portion of both observed

and committed mean global sea level rise. 102

100. Anthropogenic CO<sub>2</sub> emissions have caused and will continue to cause increased

maximum temperature extremes relative to the historical baseline. 103

101. Anthropogenic CO<sub>2</sub> emissions have caused and will continue to cause increases in

daily precipitation extremes over land. 104

102. Anthropogenic CO<sub>2</sub> emissions have caused and will continue to cause increased

frequency and severity of droughts. 105

103. Defendants, through their extraction, promotion, marketing, and sale of their fossil

fuel products, caused a substantial portion of both those emissions and the attendant historical,

projected, and committed sea level rise and other consequences of the resulting climatic changes

described herein, including increased incidences of extreme temperatures and extreme

weather events.

104. As explained above, this analysis considers only the volume of raw material

actually extracted from the Earth by these Defendants. Many of these Defendants actually are

responsible for far greater volumes of emissions because they also refine, manufacture, produce,

102 Peter U. Clark et al., supra note 44, at 365.

103 Id.

104 See. e.g., E.M. Fischer & R. Knutti, Anthropogenic Contribution to Global Occurrence of Heavy-Precipitation and High-Temperature Extremes, 5 NATURE CLIMATE CHANGE 560-64

(2015).

105 Rhode Island Department of Health, Rhode Island Climate Change and Resiliency Report,

supra note 55, at 10.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

market, promote, and sell more fossil fuel derivatives than they extract themselves by purchasing

fossil fuel products extracted by independent third parties.

105. In addition, considering the Defendants' lead role in promoting, marketing, and

selling their fossil fuels products between 1965 and 2015; their efforts to conceal the hazards of

those products from consumers; their promotion of their fossil fuel products despite knowing the

dangers associate with those products; their dogged campaign against regulation of those products

based on falsehoods, omissions, and deceptions; and their failure to pursue less hazardous

alternatives available to them, Defendants, individually and together, have substantially and

measurably contributed to the State's climate change-related injuries.

H. Defendants Went to Great Lengths to Understand the Hazards Associated with, and Knew or Should Have Known of the Dangers Associated with the

Extraction, Promotion, and Sale of Their Fossil Fuel Products.

106. By 1965, concern about the risks of anthropogenic greenhouse gas emissions

reached the highest level of the United States' scientific community. In that year, President Lyndon

B. Johnson's Science Advisory Committee Panel on Environmental Pollution reported that by the

year 2000, anthropogenic CO<sub>2</sub> emissions would "modify the heat balance of the atmosphere to

such an extent that marked changes in climate . . . could occur." President Johnson announced

in a special message to Congress that "[t]his generation has altered the composition of the

atmosphere on a global scale through . . . a steady increase in carbon dioxide from the burning of

fossil fuels."107

<sup>106</sup> President's Science Advisory Committee, Restoring the Quality of Our Environment: Report of the Environmental Pollution Panel, 9 (Nov. 1965), https://hdl.handle.net/2027/ucl.b4315678.

107 President Lyndon B. Johnson, Special Message to Congress on Conservation and Restoration

of Natural Beauty (Feb. 8, 1965), http://acsc.lib.udel.edu/items/show/292.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

107. These statements from the Johnson Administration, at a minimum, put Defendants

on notice of the potentially substantial dangers to people, communities, and the planet associated

with unabated use of their fossil fuel products. Moreover, Defendants had amassed a considerable

body of knowledge on the subject through their own independent efforts.

108. A 1963 Conservation Foundation report on a conference of scientists referenced in

the 1966 World Book Encyclopedia, as well as in presidential panel reports and other sources

around that time, described many specific consequences of rising levels of greenhouse gas

pollution in the atmosphere. It warned that a doubling of carbon dioxide "could be enough to bring

about immense flooding of lower portions of the world's land surface, resulting from increased

melting of glaciers." The publication also asserted that "a continuing rise in the amount of

atmospheric carbon dioxide is likely to be accompanied by a significant warming of the surface of

the earth which by melting the polar ice caps would raise sea level and by warming the oceans

would change considerably the distributions of marine species including commercial fisheries." It

warned of the potential inundation of "many densely settled coastal areas, including the cities of

New York and London" and the possibility of "wiping out the world's present commercial

fisheries." The report, in fact, noted that "the changes in marine life in the North Atlantic which

accompanied the temperature change have been very noticeable". 108

109. But industry interest in carbon accumulation goes back at least to 1958. A review

in that year of the American Petroleum Institute ("API") Smoke and Fumes Committee's Air

Pollution Research Program by Charles Jones (the committee secretary and Shell executive),

108 The Conservation Foundation, Implications of Rising Carbon Dioxide Content of the Atmosphere: A statement of trends and implications of carbon dioxide research reviewed at a

conference of scientists (Mar. 1963),

https://babcl.hathitrust.org/cgi/pt?id=mdp.39015004619030.

Case Number: PC-2018-4716

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

mentions a project focused on analyzing gaseous carbon data to determine the amount of carbon

of fossil origin compared to the total amount. 109

110. At that point in time API's stance was that "the petroleum industry supplies the fuel

used by the automobile, and thus has a sincere interest in the solution to the problem of pollution

from automobile exhaust," according to an API presentation at the 1958 National Conference on

Air Pollution. API acknowledged the industry's responsibility in mitigating some of the negative

impacts of its products, stating that the objective of its Smoke and Fumes committee was to

"determine the causes and methods of control of objectional atmospheric pollution resulting from

the production, manufacture, transportation, sale, and use of petroleum and its products."110

111. In 1968, a Stanford Research Institute ("SRI") report commissioned by the ΛPI and

made available to all its members, concluded, among other things:

If the Earth's temperature increases significantly, a number of events might be expected to occur including the melting of the Λntarctic ice cap, a rise in sea levels,

warming of the oceans and an increase in photosynthesis. . . .

It is clear that we are unsure as to what our long-lived pollutants are doing to our environment; however, there seems to be no doubt that the potential damage to our

environment could be severe . . . [T]he prospect for the future must be of serious

concern. [1]

112. In a supplement to the 1968 report prepared for API in 1969, authors Robinson and

Robbins projected that based on current fuel usage, atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations would reach

Charles Λ. Jones, A Review of the Air Pollution Research Program of the Smoke and Fumes Committee of the American Petroleum Institute, JOURNAL OF THE AIR POLLUTION CONTROL ASSOCIATION (1958), https://www.tandfonline.com/doi/pdf/10.1080/00966665.1958.10467854.

<sup>110</sup> C.Λ. Jones, Sources of Air Pollution – Transportation (Petroleum) (Nov. 19, 1958), https://www.industrydocumentslibrary.ucsf.edu/tobacco/docs/#id=xrcm0047.

Elmer Robinson & R.C. Robbins, Sources, Abundance, and Fate of Gaseous Atmospheric Pollutants, Stanford Research Institute (Feb. 1968),

https://www.smokeandfumes.org/documents/document16.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

 $370 \text{ ppm by } 2000^{112}$ —almost exactly what it turned out to be (369.34 ppm, according to data from

NASA).113 The report also draws the connection between the rising concentration and the use of

fossil fuels stating that "balance between environmental sources and sinks has been disturbed by

the emission to the atmosphere of additional CO2 from the increased combustion of carbonaceous

fuels" and that it seemed "unlikely that the observed rise in atmospheric CO2 has been due to

changes in the biosphere." The authors warn repeatedly of the temptations and consequences of

ignoring CO<sub>2</sub> as a problem and pollutant:

CO<sub>2</sub> is so common and such an integral part of all our activities that air pollution regulations typically state that CO<sub>2</sub> emissions are not to be considered as pollutants. This is perhaps fortunate for our present mode of living, centered as it is around carbon combustion. However, this seeming necessity, the CO<sub>2</sub> emission, is the only air pollutant, as we shall see, that has been shown to be of global importance as a factor that could change man's environment on the basis of a long period of scientific investigation. It<sup>4</sup>

113. In 1969, Shell memorialized an on-going 18-month project to collect ocean data

from oil platforms to develop and calibrate environmental forecasting theories related to predicting

wave, wind, storm, sea level, and current changes and trends. 115 Several Defendants and/or their

predecessors in interest participated in the project, including Esso Production Research Company

(ExxonMobil), Mobil Research and Development Company (ExxonMobil), Pan American

Petroleum Corporation (BP), Gulf Oil Corporation (Chevron), Texaco Inc. (Chevron), and the

Chevron Oil Field Research Company (Chevron).

<sup>112</sup> Elmer Robinson & R.C. Robbins, Sources, Abundance, and Fate of Gaseous Atmospheric Pollutants Supplement, Stanford Research Institute (June 1969).

<sup>&</sup>quot;Global Mean CO<sub>2</sub> Mixing Ratios (ppm): Observations," NASA Goddard Institute for Space Studies, https://data.giss.nasa.gov/modelforce/ghgases/Fig1A.ext.txt (webpage) (accessed June 16, 2018).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>114</sup> Elmer Robinson & R.C. Robbins, supra note 112.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>115</sup> M.M. Patterson, An Ocean Data Gathering Program for the Gulf of Mexico, Society of Petroleum Engineers (1969), https://www.onepetro.org/conference-paper/SPE-2638-MS.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

114. In a 1970 report by H.R. Holland from the Engineering Division of Imperial Oil

(Exxon), he stated: "Since pollution means disaster to the affected species, the only satisfactory

course of action is to prevent it - to maintain the addition of foreign matter at such levels that it

can be diluted, assimilated or destroyed by natural processes – to protect man's environment from

man." He also noted that "a problem of such size, complexity and importance cannot be dealt with

on a voluntary basis." CO<sub>2</sub> was listed as an air pollutant in the document. 116

115. In 1972, API members, including Defendants, received a status report on all

environmental research projects funded by API. The report summarized the 1968 SRI report

describing the impact of fossil fuel products, including Defendants', on the environment, including

global warming and attendant consequences. Defendants and/or their predecessors in interest that

received this report include, but were not limited to: American Standard of Indiana (BP), Asiatic

(Shell), Ashland (Marathon), Atlantic Richfield (BP), British Petroleum (BP), Chevron Standard

of California (Chevron), Cities Service (Citgo), Esso Research (ExxonMobil), Ethyl (formerly

affiliated with Esso, which was subsumed by ExxonMobil), Getty (ExxonMobil), Gulf (Chevron,

among others), Humble Standard of New Jersey (ExxonMobil/Chevron/BP), Marathon, Mobil

(ExxonMobil), Pan American (BP), Shell, Standard of Ohio (BP), Texaco (Chevron), Union

(Chevron), Skelly (ExxonMobil), Colonial Pipeline (ownership has included BP, Citgo,

ExxonMobil, and Chevron entities, among others) and Caltex (Chevron). 117 Other members of the

fossil fuel industry that received the report include, but were not limited to, Continental

(ConocoPhillips), Dupont (former owner of Conoco), Phillips (ConocoPhillips), Sun (Sunoco),

<sup>116</sup> H.R. Holland, *Pollution is Everybody's Business*, Imperial Oil (1970), https://www.desmogblog.com/sites/beta.desmogblog.com/files/DeSmogBlog-

Imperial%200il%20Archive-Pollution-Everyone-Business-1970.pdf.

American Petroleum Institute, Environmental Research, A Status Report, Committee for Air

and Water Conservation (January 1972), http://files.eric.ed.gov/fulltext/ED066339.pdf.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

Rock Island (Koch Industries), Signal (Honeywell), Great Northern, Edison Electric Institute

(representing electric utilities), Bituminous Coal Research (coal industry research group), Mid-

Continent Oil & Gas Association (presently the U.S. Oil & Gas Association, a national trade

association), Western Oil & Gas Association, National Petroleum Refiners Association (presently

the American Fuel and Petrochemical Manufacturers Association, a national trade association),

and Champlin (Anadarko), among others. 118

116. In a 1977 presentation and again in a 1978 briefing, Exxon scientists warned the

Exxon Corporation Management Committee that CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations were building in the Earth's

atmosphere at an increasing rate, that CO<sub>2</sub> emissions attributable to fossil fuels were retained in

the atmosphere, and that CO<sub>2</sub> was contributing to global warming. 119 The report stated:

There is general scientific agreement that the most likely manner in which mankind is influencing the global climate is through carbon dioxide release from the burning of fossil fuels . . . [and that] Man has a time window of five to ten years before the

need for hard decisions regarding changes in energy strategies might

become critical. 120

One presentation slide read: "Current scientific opinion overwhelmingly favors 117.

attributing atmospheric carbon dioxide increase to fossil fuel combustion."121 The report also

warned that "a study of past climates suggests that if the earth does become warmer, more rainfall

should result. But an increase as large as 2°C would probably also affect the distribution of the

rainfall." Moreover, the report concluded that "doubling in CO<sub>2</sub> could increase average global

118 Id

119 Memo from J.F. Black to F.G. Turpin, The Greenhouse Effect, Exxon Research and Engineering Company (June 6, 1978), http://www.climatefiles.com/exxonmobil/1978-exxon-

memo-on-greenhouse-effect-for-exxon-corporation-management-committee.

120 Id.

121 Id

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

temperature 1°C to 3°C by 2050 A.D. (10°C predicted at poles)."122

118. Thereafter, Exxon engaged in a research program to study the environmental fate

of fossil fuel-derived greenhouse gases and their impacts, which included publication of peer-

reviewed research by Exxon staff scientists and the conversion of a supertanker into a research

vessel to study the greenhouse effect and the role of the oceans in absorbing anthropogenic CO<sub>2</sub>.

Much of this research was shared in a variety of fora, symposia, and shared papers through trade

associations and directly with other Defendants.

119. Exxon scientists made the case internally for using company resources to build

corporate knowledge about the impacts of the promotion, marketing, and consumption of

Defendants' fossil fuel products. Exxon climate researcher Henry Shaw wrote in 1978: "The

rationale for Exxon's involvement and commitment of funds and personnel is based on our need

to assess the possible impact of the greenhouse effect on Exxon business. Exxon must develop a

credible scientific team that can critically evaluate the information generated on the subject and be

able to carry bad news, if any, to the corporation." 123 Moreover, Shaw emphasized the need to

collaborate with universities and government to more completely understand what he called the

"CO<sub>2</sub> problem." 124

120. In 1979, API and its members, including Defendants, convened a Task Force to

monitor and share cutting edge climate research among the oil industry. The group was initially

called the CO<sub>2</sub> and Climate Task Force, but changed its name to the Climate and Energy Task

122 10

123 Henry Shaw, Memo to Edward David Jr. on the "Greenhouse Effect, Exxon Research and

Engineering Company (Dec. 7, 1978),

http://insideclimatenews.org/sites/default/files/documents/Credible%20Scientific%20Team%201

978%20Letter.pdf.

124 Id.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

Force in 1980 (hereinafter referred to as "API CO2 Task Force"). Membership included senior

scientists and engineers from nearly every major U.S. and multinational oil and gas company,

including Exxon, Mobil (ExxonMobil), Amoco (BP), Phillips (ConocoPhillips), Texaco

(Chevron), Shell, Sunoco, Sohio (BP) as well as Standard Oil of California (BP) and Gulf Oil

(Chevron), among others. The Task Force was charged with assessing the implications of emerging

science on the petroleum and gas industries and identifying where reductions in greenhouse gas

emissions from Defendants' fossil fuel products could be made. 125

121. In 1979, API sent its members a background memo related to the API CO2 and

Climate Task Force's efforts, stating that CO2 concentrations were rising steadily in the

atmosphere, and predicting when the first clear effects of climate change might be felt. 126

122. Also in 1979, Exxon scientists advocated internally for additional fossil fuel

industry-generated atmospheric research in light of the growing consensus that consumption of

fossil fuel products was changing the Earth's climate:

We should determine how Exxon can best participate in all these [atmospheric science research] areas and influence possible legislation on environmental controls. It is important to begin to anticipate the strong intervention of environmental groups and be prepared to respond with reliable and credible data. It behooves [Exxon] to start a very aggressive defensive program in the indicated areas of atmospheric science and climate because there is a good probability that legislation affecting our business will be passed. Clearly, it is in our interest for such legislation to be based on hard scientific data. The data obtained from research

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>125</sup>American Petroleum Institute, AQ-9 Task Force Meeting Minutes (March 18, 1980), http://insideclimatenews.org/sites/default/files/documents/AQ-

<sup>9%20</sup>Task%20Force%20Meeting%20%281980%29.pdf (AQ-9 refers to the "CO<sub>2</sub> and Climate" Task Force).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>126</sup> Neela Banerjee, *Exxon's Oil Industry Peers Knew About Climate Dangers in the 1970s, Too*, INSIDE CLIMATE NEWS (Dec. 22, 2015), https://insideclimatenews.org/news/22122015/exxon-mobil-oil-industry-peers-knew-about-climate-change-dangers-1970s-american-petroleum-institute-api-shell-chevron-texaco.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

on the global damage from pollution, e.g., from coal combustion, will give us the needed focus for further research to avoid or control such pollutants. 127

held theory [about increasing CO<sub>2</sub> concentration] is that the increase is due to fossil fuel combustion, increasing CO<sub>2</sub> concentration will cause a warming of the earth's surface, and the present trend of fossil fuel consumption will cause dramatic environmental effects before the year 2050." According to the report, "ecological consequences of increased CO<sub>2</sub>" to 500 ppm (1.7 times 1850 levels) could mean: "a global temperature increase of 3°F;" "the southwest states would be hotter, probably by more than 3°F, and drier;" "most of the glaciers in the North Cascades and Glacier National Park would be melted;" "there would be less of a winter snow pack in the Cascades, Sierras, and Rockies, necessitating a major increase in storage reservoirs;" "marine life would be markedly changed;" and "maintaining runs of salmon and steelhead and other subarctic species in the Columbia River system would become increasingly difficult." With a doubling of the 1860 CO<sub>2</sub> concentration, "ocean levels would rise four feet" and "the Arctic Ocean would be ice free for at least six months each year, causing major shifts in weather patterns in the northern hemisphere." 130

124. Further, the report stated that unless fossil fuel use was constrained, there would be "noticeable temperature changes" associated with an increase in atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> from about 280

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>127</sup> Henry Shaw, Exxon Memo to H.N. Weinberg about "Research in Atmospheric Science", Exxon Inter-Office Correspondence (Nov. 19, 1979), https://insideclimatenews.org/sites/default/files/documents/Probable%20Legislation%20Memo%20(1979).pdf.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>128</sup> W.L. Ferrall, *Exxon Memo to R.L. Hirsch about "Controlling Atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub>"*, Exxon Research and Engineering Company (Oct. 16, 1979), http://insideclimatenews.org/sites/default/files/documents/CO2%20and%20Fuel%20Use%20Projections.pdf.

<sup>129</sup> 

<sup>130</sup> Id.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

parts per million before the Industrial Revolution to 400 parts per million by the year 2010. 131

Those projections proved remarkably accurate—atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations surpassed 400

parts per million in May 2013, for the first time in millions of years. <sup>132</sup> In 2015, the annual average

CO<sub>2</sub> concentration rose above 400 parts per million, and in 2016 the annual low surpassed 400

parts per million, meaning atmospheric CO2 concentration remained above that threshold

all year. 133

125. In 1980, API's CO<sub>2</sub> Task Force members discussed the oil industry's responsibility

to reduce CO<sub>2</sub> emissions by changing refining processes and developing fuels that emit less CO<sub>2</sub>.

The minutes from the Task Force's February 29, 1980, meeting included a summary of a

presentation on "The CO2 Problem" given by Dr. John Laurmann, which identified the "scientific

consensus on the potential for large future climatic response to increased CO2 levels" as a reason

for API members to have concern with the "CO2 problem" and informed attendees that there was

"strong empirical evidence that rise [in CO<sub>2</sub> concentration was] caused by anthropogenic release

of CO<sub>2</sub>, mainly from fossil fuel combustion." <sup>134</sup> Moreover, Dr. Laurmann warned that the amount

of CO<sub>2</sub> in the atmosphere could double by 2038, which he said would likely lead to a 2.5°C (4.5°F)

rise in global average temperatures with "major economic consequences." He then told the Task

Force that models showed a 5°C (9°F) rise by 2067, with "globally catastrophic effects." 135 A

131 Id.

<sup>132</sup> Nicola Jones, *How the World Passed a Carbon Threshold and Why it Matters*, YALE ENVIRONMENT 360 (Jan. 26, 2017), http://e360.yale.edu/features/how-the-world-passed-a-carbon-threshold-400ppm-and-why-it-matters.

133 Id.

<sup>134</sup> American Petroleum Institute, *AQ-9 Task Force Meeting Minutes* (Mar. 18, 1980), http://insideclimatenews.org/sites/default/files/documents/AQ-9%20Task%20Force%20 Meeting%20%281980%29.pdf (AQ-9 refers to the "CQ<sub>2</sub> and Climate" Task Force).

135 Id.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

taskforce member and representative of Texaco (Chevron) leadership present at the meeting

posited that the API CO<sub>2</sub> Task Force should develop ground rules for energy release of fuels and

the cleanup of fuels as they relate to CO2 creation.

In 1980, the API CO<sub>2</sub> Task Force also discussed a potential area for investigation:

alternative energy sources as a means of mitigating CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from Defendants' fossil fuel

products. These efforts called for research and development to "Investigate the Market Penetration

Requirements of Introducing a New Energy Source into World Wide Use." Such investigation was

to include the technical implications of energy source changeover, research timing,

and requirements. 136

127. By 1980, Exxon's senior leadership had become intimately familiar with the

greenhouse effect and the role of CO<sub>2</sub> in the atmosphere. In that year, Exxon Senior Vice President

and Board member George Piercy questioned Exxon researchers on the minutiae of the ocean's

role in absorbing atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub>, including whether there was a net CO<sub>2</sub> flux out of the ocean

into the atmosphere in certain zones where upwelling of cold water to the surface occurs, because

Piercy evidently believed that the oceans could absorb and retain higher concentrations of CO<sub>2</sub>

than the atmosphere. 137 This inquiry aligns with Exxon supertanker research into whether the

ocean would act as a significant CO<sub>2</sub> sink that would sequester atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> long enough to

allow unabated emissions without triggering dire climatic consequences. As described below,

137 Neela Baner jee, More Exxon Documents Show How Much It Knew About Climate 35 Years Ago, INSIDE CLIMATE NEWS (Dec. 1, 2015), https://insideclimatenews.org/news/01122015/

documents-exxons-early-co2-position-senior-executives-engage-and-warming-forecast.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605

Reviewer: Alexa G.

Exxon eventually discontinued this research before it produced enough data from which to derive

a conclusion. 138

128. Also in 1980, Imperial Oil (ExxonMobil) reported to Esso and Exxon managers

and environmental staff that increases in fossil fuel usage aggravates CO2 in the atmosphere.

Noting that the United Nations was encouraging research into the carbon cycle, Imperial reported

that "[t]echnology exists to remove CO2 from [fossil fuel power plant] stack gases but removal of

only 50% of the CO<sub>2</sub> would double the cost of power generation."

129. Exxon scientist Roger Cohen warned his colleagues in a 1981 internal

memorandum that "future developments in global data gathering and analysis, along with advances

in climate modeling, may provide strong evidence for a delayed CO<sub>2</sub> effect of a truly substantial

magnitude," and that under certain circumstances it would be "very likely that we will

unambiguously recognize the threat by the year 2000."139 Cohen had expressed concern that the

memorandum mischaracterized potential effects of unabated CO<sub>2</sub> emissions from Defendants'

fossil fuel products: "...it is distinctly possible that the ... [Exxon Planning Division's] scenario

will produce effects which will indeed be catastrophic (at least for a substantial fraction of the

world's population)."140

<sup>138</sup> Neela Banerjee et al., Exxon Believed Deep Dive into Climate Research Would Protect Its Business, INSIDE CLIMATE NEWS (Sept. 17, 2015), https://insideclimatenews.org/news/16092015/exxon-believed-deep-dive-into-climate-research-would-protect-its-business.

<sup>139</sup> Roger W. Cohen, Exxon Memo to W. Glass about possible "catastrophic" effect of CO<sub>2</sub>, Exxon Inter-Office Correspondence (Aug. 18, 1981), http://www.climatefiles.com/exxonmobil/1981-exxon-memo-on-possible-emission-consequences-of-fossil-fuel-consumption.

140 Id.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

130. In 1981, Exxon's Henry Shaw, the company's lead climate researcher at the time, prepared a summary of Exxon's current position on the greenhouse effect for Edward David Jr.,

president of Exxon Research and Engineering, stating in relevant part:

• "Atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> will double in 100 years if fossil fuels grow at 1.4%/a<sup>2</sup>.

• 3°C global average temperature rise and 10°C at poles if CO<sub>2</sub> doubles.

o Major shifts in rainfall/agriculture

o Polar ice may melt"<sup>141</sup>

131. In 1982, another report prepared for API by scientists at the Lamont-Doherty

Geological Observatory at Columbia University recognized that atmospheric CO2 concentration

had risen significantly compared to the beginning of the industrial revolution from about 290 parts

per million to about 340 parts per million in 1981 and acknowledged that despite differences in

climate modelers' predictions, all models indicated a temperature increase caused by

anthropogenic CO<sub>2</sub> within a global mean range of 4°C (7.2°F). The report advised that there was

scientific consensus that "a doubling of atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> from [] pre-industrial revolution value

would result in an average global temperature rise of  $(3.0 \pm 1.5)^{\circ}$ C [5.4 ± 2.7°F]." It went further,

warning that "[s]uch a warming can have serious consequences for man's comfort and survival

since patterns of aridity and rainfall can change, the height of the sea level can increase

considerably and the world food supply can be affected." 142 Exxon's own modeling research

confirmed this, and the company's results were later published in at least three peer-reviewed

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>141</sup> Henry Shaw, Exxon Memo to E. E. David, Jr. about "CO<sub>2</sub>Position Statement", Exxon Inter-Office Correspondence (May 15, 1981), https://insideclimatenews.org/sites/default/files/documents/Exxon%20Position%20on%20CO2%20%281981%29.pdf.

American Petroleum Institute, *Climate Models and CO<sub>2</sub> Warming: A Selective Review and Summary*, Lamont-Doherty Geological Observatory (Columbia University) (Mar. 1982), https://assets.documentcloud.org/documents/2805626/1982-API-Climate-Models-and-CO<sub>2</sub>-Warming-a.pdf.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

scientific papers. 143

132.

climate change to a "wide circulation [of] Exxon management . . . intended to familiarize Exxon personnel with the subject." The primer also was "restricted to Exxon personnel and not to be distributed externally." The primer compiled science on climate change available at the time, and confirmed fossil fuel combustion as a primary anthropogenic contributor to global warming.

Also in 1982, Exxon's Environmental Affairs Manager distributed a primer on

The report estimated a CO<sub>2</sub> doubling around 2090 based on Exxon's long-range modeled outlook.

The author warned that "uneven global distribution of increased rainfall and increased

evaporation" were expected to occur, and that "disturbances in the existing global water

distribution balance would have dramatic impact on soil moisture, and in turn, on agriculture." <sup>146</sup>

133. Moreover, the melting of the Antarctic ice sheet could result in global sea level rise of five fect which would "cause flooding on much of the U.S. East Coast, including the State of Florida and Washington, D.C." Exxon's primer warned that "there are some potentially catastrophic events that must be considered," including sea level rise from melting polar ice sheets. It noted that some scientific groups were concerned "that once the effects are measurable, they

might not be reversible."148

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>143</sup> See Roger W. Cohen, Exxon Memo summarizing findings of research in climate modeling, Exxon Research and Engineering Company (Sept. 2, 1982), https://insideclimatenews.org/sites/default/files/documents/%2522Consensus%2522%20on%20CO2%20Impacts%20(1982).pdf (discussing research articles).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>144</sup> M. B. Glaser, Exxon Memo to Management about "CO<sub>2</sub> 'Greenhouse' Effect", Exxon Research and Engineering Company (Nov. 12, 1982), http://insideclimatenews.org/sites/default/files/documents/1982%20Exxon%20Primer%20on%20CO2%20Greenhouse%20Effect.pdf.

<sup>145</sup> Id.

<sup>146</sup> Id.

<sup>147</sup> Id.

<sup>148</sup> Id.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

In a summary of Exxon's climate modeling research from 1982, Director of

Exxon's Theoretical and Mathematical Sciences Laboratory Roger Cohen wrote that "the time

required for doubling of atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> depends on future world consumption of fossil fuels."

Cohen concluded that Exxon's own results were "consistent with the published predictions of more

complex climate models" and "in accord with the scientific consensus on the effect of increased

atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> on climate."149

At the fourth biennial Maurice Ewing Symposium at the Lamont-Doherty

Geophysical Observatory in October 1982, attended by members of API, Exxon Research and

Engineering Company president E.E. David delivered a speech titled: "Inventing the Future:

Energy and the CO<sub>2</sub> 'Greenhouse Effect.'" 150 His remarks included the following statement:

"[F]ew people doubt that the world has entered an energy transition away from dependence upon

fossil fuels and toward some mix of renewable resources that will not pose problems of CO<sub>2</sub>

accumulation." He went on, discussing the human opportunity to address anthropogenic climate

change before the point of no return:

It is ironic that the biggest uncertainties about the CO<sub>2</sub> buildup are not in predicting what the climate will do, but in predicting what people will do. . . . [It] appears we still have time to generate the wealth and knowledge we will need to invent the transition to a stable energy system.

136. Throughout the early 1980s, at Exxon's direction, Exxon climate scientist Henry

Shaw forecasted emissions of CO<sub>2</sub> from fossil fuel usc. Those estimates were incorporated into

Exxon's 21st century energy projections and were distributed among Exxon's various divisions.

<sup>149</sup> Roger W. Cohen, Exxon Memo summarizing findings of research in climate modeling, supra note 143.

150 E. E. David, Jr., Inventing the Future: Energy and the CO2 Greenhouse Effect: Remarks at

the Fourth Annual Ewing Symposium, Tenafly, N.J (1982),

http://sites.agu.org/publications/files/2015/09/ch1.pdf.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

Shaw's conclusions included an expectation that atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations would double in

2090 per the Exxon model, with an attendant 2.3–5.6°F average global temperature increase. Shaw

compared his model results to those of the U.S. EPA, the National Academy of Sciences, and the

Massachusetts Institute of Technology, indicating that the Exxon model predicted a longer delay

than any of the other models, although its temperature increase prediction was in the mid-range of

the four projections. 151

During the 1980s, many Defendants formed their own research units focused on

climate modeling. The API, including the API CO<sub>2</sub> Task Force, provided a forum for Defendants

to share their research efforts and corroborate their findings related to anthropogenic greenhouse

gas emissions. 152

During this time, Defendants' statements express an understanding of their 138.

obligation to consider and mitigate the externalities of unabated promotion, marketing, and sale of

their fossil fuel products. For example, in 1988, Richard Tucker, the president of Mobil Oil,

presented at the American Institute of Chemical Engineers National Meeting, the premier

educational forum for chemical engineers, where he stated:

[H] umanity, which has created the industrial system that has transformed civilities, is also responsible for the environment, which sometimes is at risk because of unintended consequences of industrialization. . . . Maintaining the health of this life-support system is emerging as one of the highest priorities. . . . [W]e must all

be environmentalists.

The environmental covenant requires action on many fronts . . . the lowatmosphere ozone problem, the upper-atmosphere ozone problem and the

151 Neela Banerjee, More Exxon Documents Show How Much It Knew About Climate 35 Years Ago, INSIDE CLIMATE NEWS (Dec. 1, 2015), https://insideclimatenews.org/news/01122015/ documents-exxons-early-co2-position-senior-executives-engage-and-warming-forecast.

152 Neela Banerjee, Exxon's Oil Industry Peers Knew About Climate Dangers in the 1970s, Too, supra note 126.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

greenhouse effect, to name a few. . . . Our strategy must be to reduce pollution before it is ever generated—to prevent problems at the source.

Prevention means engineering a new generation of fuels, lubricants and chemical products. . . . Prevention means designing catalysts and processes that minimize or eliminate the production of unwanted byproducts. . . . Prevention on a global scale may even require a dramatic reduction in our dependence on fossil fuels—and a shift towards solar, hydrogen, and safe nuclear power. It may be possible that—just possible—that the energy industry will transform itself so completely that observers will declare it a new industry. . . . Brute force, low-tech responses and money alone won't meet the challenges we face in the energy industry. <sup>153</sup>

139. Also in 1988, the Shell Greenhouse Effect Working Group issued a confidential internal report, "The Greenhouse Effect," which acknowledged global warming's anthropogenic nature: "Man-made carbon dioxide released into and accumulated in the atmosphere is believed to warm the earth through the so-called greenhouse effect." The authors also noted the burning of fossil fuels as a primary driver of CO<sub>2</sub> buildup and warned that warming could "create significant changes in sea level, ocean currents, precipitation patterns, regional temperature and weather." Taking it a step further, they pointed to the potential for "direct operational consequences" of sea level rise on "offshore installations, coastal facilities and operations (e.g. platforms, harbours, refineries, depots)." 154

140. Similar to early warnings by Exxon scientists, the Shell report notes that "by the time the global warming becomes detectable it could be too late to take effective countermeasures to reduce the effects or even to stabilize the situation." The authors mention the need to consider policy changes on multiple occasions, noting that "the potential implications for the world are...so

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>153</sup> Richard E. Tucker, *High Tech Frontiers in the Energy Industry: The Challenge Ahead*, AIChE National Meeting (Nov. 30, 1988), https://hdl.handle.net/2027/purl.32754074119482?urlappend=%3Bscq=522.

Greenhouse Effect Working Group, *The Greenhouse Effect*, Shell Internationale Petroleum, 30 (May 1988), https://www.documentcloud.org/documents/4411090-Document3.html#document/p9/a411239.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

large that policy options need to be considered much earlier" and that research should be "directed

more to the analysis of policy and energy options than to studies of what we will be facing exactly."

In 1989, Esso Resources Canada (ExxonMobil) commissioned a report on the 141.

impacts of climate change on existing and proposed natural gas facilities in the Mackenzie River

Valley and Delta, including extraction facilities on the Beaufort Sea and a pipeline crossing

Canada's Northwest Territory. 155 It reported that "large zones of the Mackenzie Valley could be

affected dramatically by climatic change" and that "the greatest concern in Norman Wells [oil

town in North West Territories, Canadal should be the changes in permafrost that are likely to

occur under conditions of climate warming." The report concluded that, in light of climate models

showing a "general tendency towards warmer and wetter climate," operation of those facilities

would be compromised by increased precipitation, increase in air temperature, changes in

permafrost conditions, and significantly, sea level rise and erosion damage. The authors

recommended factoring these eventualities into future development planning and also warned that

"a rise in sea level could cause increased flooding and erosion damage on Richards Island." 156

142. In 1991, Shell produced a film called "Climate of Concern." The film advises that

while "no two [climate change projection] scenarios fully agree, . . . [they] have each prompted

the same serious warning. A warning endorsed by a uniquely broad consensus of scientists in their

report to the UN at the end of 1990." The warning was of an increasing frequency of abnormal

weather and of sea level rise of about one meter over the coming century. Shell specifically

described the impacts of anthropogenic sea level rise on tropical islands, "barely afloat even now,

155Stephen Lonergan & Kathy Young, An Assessment of the Effects of Climate Warming on Energy Developments in the Mackenzie River Valley and Delta, Canadian Arctic, 7 Energy EXPLORATION & EXPLOITATION 359-81 (Oct. 1, 1989), http://journals.sagepub.com/doi/abs/ 10.1177/014459878900700508.

156 Id.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

... [f]irst made uninhabitable and then obliterated beneath the waves. Wetland habitats destroyed

by intruding salt. Coastal lowlands suffering pollution of precious groundwater." It warned of

"greenhouse refugees," people who abandoned homelands inundated by the sea, or displaced

because of catastrophic changes to the environment. The video concludes with a stark admonition:

"Global warming is not yet certain, but many think that the wait for final proof would be

irresponsible. Action now is seen as the only safe insurance."157

143. The fossil fuel industry, including Defendants, was at the forefront of carbon

dioxide research for much of the latter half of the 20th century. They developed cutting edge and

innovative technology and worked with many of the field's top researchers to produce

exceptionally sophisticated studies and models. For instance, in the mid-nineties Shell began using

scenarios to plan how the company could respond to various global forces in the future. In one

scenario published in a 1998 internal report, Shell paints an eerily prescient scene:

In 2010, a series of violent storms causes extensive damage to the eastern coast of the U.S. Although it is not clear whether the storms are caused by climate change, people are not willing to take further chances. The insurance industry refuses to accept liability, setting off a fierce debate over who is liable: the insurance industry or the government. After all, two successive IPCC reports since 1993 have reinforced the human connection to climate change"... "Following the storms, a coalition of environmental NGOs brings a class-action suit against the US government and fossil-fuel companies on the grounds of neglecting what scientists (including their own) have been saying for years: that something must be done. A social reaction to the use of fossil fuels grows, and individuals become 'vigilante environmentalists' in the same way, a generation earlier, they had become fiercely anti-tobacco. Direct-action campaigns against companies escalate. Young consumers, especially, demand action 158

<sup>157</sup> Jelmer Mommers, Shell Made a Film About Climate Change in 1991 (Then Neglected To Heed Its Own Warning), DE CORRESPONDENT (Feb. 27, 2017), https://thecorrespondent.com/ 6285/shell-made-a-film-about-climate-change-in-1991-then-neglected-to-heed-its-ownwarning/692663565-875331f6.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>158</sup> Royal Dutch/Shell Group, Group Scenarios 1998–2020, 115 (1998), http://www.documentcloud.org/documents/4430277-27-1-Compiled.html.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

> Fossil fuel companies did not just consider climate change impacts in scenarios. In 144.

the mid-1990s, ExxonMobil, Shell, and Imperial Oil (ExxonMobil) jointly undertook the Sable

Offshore Energy Project in Nova Scotia. The project's own Environmental Impact Statement

declared: "The impact of a global warming sea-level rise may be particularly significant in Nova

Scotia. The long-term tide gauge records at a number of locations along the N.S. coast have shown

sea level has been rising over the past century. . . . For the design of coastal and offshore structures,

an estimated rise in water level, due to global warming, of 0.5 m [1.64 feet] may be assumed for

the proposed project life (25 years)."159

145. Climate change research conducted by Defendants and their industry associations

frequently acknowledged uncertainties in their climate modeling—those uncertainties, however,

were merely with respect to the magnitude and timing of climate impacts resulting from fossil fuel

consumption, not that significant changes would eventually occur. The Defendants' researchers

and the researchers at their industry associations harbored little doubt that climate change was

occurring and that fossil fuel products were, and are, the primary cause.

Despite the overwhelming information about the threats to people and the planet 146.

posed by continued unabated use of their fossil fuel products, Defendants failed to act as they

reasonably should have to mitigate or avoid those dire adverse impacts. Defendants instead

adopted the position, as described below, that the absence of meaningful regulations on the

consumption of their fossil fuel products was the equivalent of a license to continue the pursuit of

profits from those products. This position was an abdication of Defendants' responsibility to

159 ExxonMobil, Sable Project, Development Plan, Volume 3 – Environmental Impact Statement Ch 4: Environmental Setting, 4-77, http://soep.com/about-the-project/development-plan-

application.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

consumers and the public, including the State, to act on their superior knowledge of the reasonably

foreseeable hazards of unabated production and consumption of their fossil fuel products.

I. Defendants Did Not Disclose Known Harms Associated with the Extraction, Promotion, and Consumption of Their Fossil Fuel Products, and Instead

Affirmatively Acted to Obscure Those Harms and Engaged in a Concerted

Campaign to Evade Regulation.

Campaign to Evade Regulation.

147. By 1988, Defendants had amassed a compelling body of knowledge, unavailable to

the general public and the broader scientific community, about the role of anthropogenic

greenhouse gases and specifically those emitted from the normal use of Defendants' fossil fuel

products, in causing global warming, disruptions to the hydrologic cycle, extreme precipitation

and drought, heatwaves, and associated consequences for human communities and the

environment. On notice that their products were causing global climate change and dire effects on

the planet, Defendants were faced with the decision and were in control of whether to take steps

to limit the damages their fossil fuel products were causing and would continue to cause for

virtually every one of Earth's inhabitants, including the State of Rhode Island and its citizens.

148. Defendants at any time before or thereafter could and reasonably should have taken

any of a number of steps to mitigate the damages caused by their fossil fuel products, and their

own comments reveal an awareness of what some of these steps may have been. Defendants should

have made reasonable warnings to consumers, the public, and regulators of the dangers known to

Defendants of the unabated consumption of their fossil fuel products, and they should have taken

reasonable steps to limit the potential greenhouse gas emissions arising out of their fossil

fuel products.

149. But several key events during the period 1988–1992 appear to have prompted

Defendants to change their course of action from general research and internal discussion on

nica in i Toviacnoc/Bristor County Capena

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

climate change to a public campaign aimed at evading regulation of their fossil fuel products and/or

emissions therefrom. These include:

a. In 1988, National Aeronautics and Space Administration ("NASΛ") scientists

confirmed that human activities were actually contributing to global

warming. 160 On June 23 of that year, NASA scientist James Hansen's

presentation of this information to Congress engendered significant news

coverage and publicity for the announcement, including coverage on the front

page of the New York Times.

b. On July 28, 1988, Senator Robert Stafford and four bipartisan co-sponsors

introduced S. 2666, "The Global Environmental Protection Act," to regulate

CO<sub>2</sub> and other greenhouse gases. Four more bipartisan bills to significantly

reduce CO<sub>2</sub> pollution were introduced over the following ten weeks, and in

August, U.S. Presidential candidate George H.W. Bush pledged that his

presidency would "combat the greenhouse effect with the White House

effect."161 Political will in the United States to reduce anthropogenic

greenhouse gas emissions and mitigate the harms associated with Defendants'

fossil fuel products was gaining momentum.

c. In December 1988, the United Nations formed the Intergovernmental Panel

on Climate Change ("IPCC"), a scientific panel dedicated to providing the

<sup>160</sup> See Peter C. Frumhoff et al., The Climate Responsibilities of Industrial Carbon Producers, 132 CLIMATIC CHANGE 161 (2015).

132 CLIMATIC CHANGE TOT (2013).

<sup>161</sup> N.Y. TIMES, The White House and the Greenhouse (May 9, 1998),

http://www.nytimes.com/1989/05/09/opinion/the-white-house-and-the-greenhouse.html.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

world's governments with an objective, scientific analysis of climate change and its environmental, political, and economic impacts.

d. In 1990, the IPCC published its First Assessment Report on anthropogenic climate change, <sup>162</sup> in which it concluded that (1) "there is a natural greenhouse effect which already keeps the Earth warmer than it would otherwise be," and (2) that

emissions resulting from human activities are substantially increasing the atmospheric concentrations of the greenhouse gases carbon dioxide, methane, chlorofluorocarbons (CFCs) and nitrous oxide. These increases will enhance the greenhouse effect, resulting on average in an additional warming of the Earth's surface. The main greenhouse gas, water vapour, will increase in response to global warming and further enhance it. 163

The IPCC reconfirmed these conclusions in a 1992 supplement to the First Assessment report.<sup>164</sup>

e. The United Nations began preparation for the 1992 Earth Summit in Rio de Janciro, Brazil, a major, newsworthy gathering of 172 world governments, of which 116 sent their heads of state. The Summit resulted in the United Nations Framework Convention on Climate Change ("UNFCCC"), an international environmental treaty providing protocols for future negotiations aimed at "stabiliz[ing] greenhouse gas concentrations in the atmosphere at a level that

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>162</sup> See IPCC, Reports, http://www.ipcc.ch/publications\_and\_data/publications and data reports.shtml.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>163</sup> IPCC, Climate Change: The IPCC Scientific Assessment, Policymakers Summary (1990), http://www.ipcc.ch/ipccreports/far/wg I/ipcc far wg I spm.pdf.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>164</sup> IPCC, 1992 IPCC Supplement to the First Assessment Report (1992), http://www.ipcc.ch/publications\_and\_data/publications\_ipcc\_90\_92\_assessments\_far.shtml.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

would prevent dangerous anthropogenic interference with the climate

system."165

These world events marked a shift in public discussion of climate change, and the 150.

initiation of international efforts to curb anthropogenic greenhouse emissions – developments that

had stark implications for, and would have diminished the profitability of, Defendants' fossil

fuel products.

But rather than collaborating with the international community by acting to 151.

forestall, or at least decrease, their fossil fuel products' contributions to global warning, sea level

rise, disruptions to the hydrologic cycle, and associated consequences to Rhode Island and other

communities, Defendants embarked on a decades-long campaign designed to maximize continued

dependence on their products and undermine national and international efforts like the Kyoto

Protocol to rein in greenhouse gas emissions.

Defendants' campaign, which focused on concealing, discrediting, and/or 152.

misrepresenting information that tended to support restricting consumption of (and thereby

decreasing demand for) Defendants' fossil fuel products, took several forms. The campaign

enabled Defendants to accelerate their business practice of exploiting fossil fuel reserves, and

concurrently externalize the social and environmental costs of their fossil fuel products. These

activities stood in direct contradiction to Defendants' own prior recognition that the science of

anthropogenic climate change was clear and that the greatest uncertainties involved responsive

human behavior, not scientific understanding of the issue.

<sup>165</sup> United Nations, United Nations Framework Convention on Climate Change, Article 2 (1992),

https://unfccc.int/resource/docs/convkp/conveng.pdf.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

153. Defendants took affirmative steps to conceal, from the State and the general public,

the foresceable impacts of the use of their fossil fuel products on the Earth's climate and associated

harms to people and communities. Defendants embarked on a concerted public relations campaign

to cast doubt on the science connecting global climate change to fossil fuel products and

greenhouse gas emissions, in order to influence public perception of the existence of anthropogenic

global warming and sea level rise, disruptions to weather cycles, extreme precipitation and

drought, and associated consequences. The effort included promoting their hazardous products

through advertising campaigns and the initiation and funding of climate change denialist

organizations, designed to influence consumers to continue using Defendants' fossil fuel products

irrespective of those products' damage to communities and the environment.

154. For example, in 1988, Joseph Carlson, an Exxon public affairs manager, described

the "Exxon Position," which included among others, two important messaging tenets: (1)

"[e]mphasize the uncertainty in scientific conclusions regarding the potential enhanced

Greenhouse Effect;" and (2) "[r]esist the overstatement and sensationalization [sic] of potential

greenhouse effect which could lead to noneconomic development of non-fossil fuel resources." <sup>166</sup>

155. A 1994 Shell report entitled "The Enhanced Greenhouse Effect: A Review of the

Scientific Aspects" by Royal Dutch Shell environmental advisor Peter Langcake stands in stark

contrast to the company's 1988 report on the same topic. Whereas before, the authors

recommended consideration of policy solutions early on, Langcake warned of the potentially

dramatic "economic effects of ill-advised policy measures." While the report recognized the IPCC

conclusions as the mainstream view, Langcake still emphasized scientific uncertainty, noting, for

<sup>166</sup> Joseph M. Carlson, Exxon Memo on "The Greenhouse Effect" (Aug. 3, 1988), https://assets.documentcloud.org/documents/3024180/1998-Exxon-Memo-on-the-Greenhouse-

Effect.pdf.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

example, that "the postulated link between any observed temperature rise and human activities has

to be seen in relation to natural variability, which is still largely unpredictable." The Group position

is stated clearly in the report: "Scientific uncertainty and the evolution of energy systems indicate

that policies to curb greenhouse gas emissions beyond 'no regrets' measures could be premature,

divert resources from more pressing needs and further distort markets."167

156. In 1991, for example, the Information Council for the Environment ("ICE"), whose

members included affiliates, predecessors and/or subsidiaries of Defendants, including Pittsburg

and Midway Coal Mining (Chevron) and Island Creek Coal Company (Occidental), launched a

national climate change science denial campaign with full-page newspaper ads, radio commercials,

a public relations tour schedule, "mailers," and research tools to measure campaign success.

Included among the campaign strategies was to "reposition global warming as theory (not fact)."

Its target audience included older less-educated males who arc "predisposed to favor the ICE

agenda, and likely to be even more supportive of that agenda following exposure to new info."168

An implicit goal of ICE's advertising campaign was to change public opinion and 157.

avoid regulation. A memo from Richard Lawson, president of the National Coal Association asked

members to contribute to the ICE campaign with the justification that "policymakers are prepared

to act [on global warming]. Public opinion polls reveal that 60% of the American people already

<sup>167</sup> P. Langcake, The Enhanced Greenhouse Effect: A review of the Scientific Aspects, (Dec.

1994), https://www.documentcloud.org/documents/4411099-

Document 1 1.html#document/p15/a411511.

<sup>168</sup> Union of Concerned Scientists, Deception Dossier #5: Coal's "Information Council on the Environment" Sham (1991), http://www.ucsusa.org/sites/default/files/attach/2015/07/Climate-

Deception-Dossier-5 ICE.pdf.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

believe global warming is a serious environmental problem. Our industry cannot sit on the sidelines in this debate."<sup>169</sup>

158. The following images are examples of ICE-funded print advertisements challenging the validity of climate science and intended to obscure the scientific consensus on anthropogenic climate change and induce political inertia to address it.<sup>170</sup>

Fig. 7: Information Council for the Environment Advertisements



159. In 1996, Exxon released a publication called "Global Warming: Who's Right? Facts about a debate that's turned up more questions than answers." In the publication's preface, Exxon CEO Lee Raymond stated that "taking drastic action immediately is unnecessary since many scientists agree there's ample time to better understand the climate system." The subsequent article described the greenhouse effect as "unquestionably real and definitely a good thing," while ignoring the severe consequences that would result from the influence of the increased CO<sub>2</sub> concentration on the Earth's climate. Instead, it characterized the greenhouse effect as simply

Naomi Oreskes, My Facts Are Better Than Your Facts: Spreading Good News about Global Warming (2010), in Peter Howlett et al., How Well Do Facts Travel?: The Dissemination of Reliable Knowledge, 136–66, Cambridge University Press (2011).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>170</sup> Union of Concerned Scientists, *Deception Dossier #5: Coal's "Information Council on the Environment" Sham, supra* note 168, at 47–49.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

"what makes the earth's atmosphere livable." Directly contradicting their own internal reports and

peer-reviewed science, the article ascribed the rise in temperature since the late 19th century to

"natural fluctuations that occur over long periods of time" rather than to the anthropogenic

emissions that Exxon and other scientists had confirmed were responsible. The article also falsely

challenged the computer models that projected the future impacts of unabated fossil fuel product

consumption, including those developed by Exxon's own employees, as having been "proved to

be inaccurate." The article contradicted the numerous reports circulated among Exxon's staff, and

by the API, by stating that "the indications are that a warmer world would be far more benign than

many imagine . . . moderate warming would reduce mortality rates in the US, so a slightly warmer

climate would be more healthful." Raymond concluded his preface by attacking advocates for

limiting the use of his company's fossil fuel products as "drawing on bad science, faulty logic, or

unrealistic assumptions" – despite the important role that Exxon's own scientists had played in

compiling those same scientific underpinnings.<sup>171</sup>

API published an extensive report in the same year warning against concern over

CO<sub>2</sub> buildup and any need to curb consumption or regulate the industry. The introduction states

that "there is no persuasive basis for forcing Americans to dramatically change their lifestyles to

use less oil." The authors discourage the further development of certain alternative energy sources,

writing that "government agencies have advocated the increased use of ethanol and the electric

car, without the facts to support the assertion that either is superior to existing fuels and

technologies" and that "policies that mandate replacing oil with specific alternative fuel

technologies freeze progress at the current level of technology, and reduce the chance that

Exxon Corp., Global Warming: Who's Right?, (1996), https://www.documentcloud.org/

documents/2805542-Exxon-Global-Warming-Whos-Right.html.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

innovation will develop better solutions." The paper also denies the human connection to climate change, saying that no "scientific evidence exists that human activities are significantly affecting sea levels, rainfall, surface temperatures or the intensity and frequency of storms." The message the report repeatedly sends is clear: "Facts don't support the arguments for restraining oil use." 172

161. In a speech presented at the World Petroleum Congress in Bei jing in 1997 at which many of the Defendants were present, Exxon CEO Lee Raymond reiterated these views. This time, he presented a false dichotomy between stable energy markets and abatement of the marketing, promotion, and sale of fossil fuel products known to Defendants to be hazardous. He stated:

Some people who argue that we should drastically curtail our use of fossil fuels for environmental reasons...my belief [is] that such proposals are neither prudent nor practical. With no readily available economic alternatives on the horizon, fossil fuels will continue to supply most of the world's and this region's energy for the foreseeable future.

Governments also need to provide a stable investment climate . . . They should avoid the temptation to intervene in energy markets in ways that give advantage to one competitor over another or one fuel over another.

We also have to keep in mind that most of the greenhouse effects comes from natural sources . . . Leaping to radically cut this tiny sliver of the greenhouse pie on the premise that it will affect climate defies common sense and lacks foundation in our current understanding of the climate system.

Let's agree there's a lot we really don't know about how climate will change in the 21st century and beyond . . . It is highly unlikely that the temperature in the middle of the next century will be significantly affected whether policies are enacted now or 20 years from now. It's bad public policy to impose very costly regulations and restrictions when their need has yet to be proven. <sup>173</sup>

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>172</sup> Sally Brain Gentille et al., *Reinventing Energy: Making the Right Choices, American Petroleum Institute*, (1996), http://www.climatefiles.com/trade-group/american-petroleum-institute/1996-reinventing-energy.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>173</sup> Lee R. Raymond, *Energy – Key to growth and a better environment for Asia-Pacific nations*, World Petroleum Congress (Oct. 13, 1997), https://assets.documentcloud.org/documents/2840902/1997-Lee-Raymond-Speech-at-China-World-Petroleum.pdf.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

162. Imperial Oil (ExxonMobil) CEO Robert Peterson falsely denied the established connection between Defendants' fossil fuel products and anthropogenic climate change in the Summer 1998 Imperial Oil Review, "A Cleaner Canada:"

[T]his issue [referring to climate change] has absolutely nothing to do with pollution and air quality. Carbon dioxide is not a pollutant but an essential ingredient of life on this planet . . . .[T]he question of whether or not the trapping of 'greenhouse gases will result in the planet's getting warmer . . . has no connection whatsoever with our day-to-day weather.

There is absolutely no agreement among climatologists on whether or not the planet is getting warmer, or, if it is, on whether the warming is the result of man-made factors or natural variations in the climate. . . . I feel very safe in saying that the view that burning fossil fuels will result in global climate change remains an unproved hypothesis. 174

163. Mobil (ExxonMobil) paid for a series of "advertorials," advertisements located in the editorial section of the New York Times and meant to look like editorials rather than paid ads. These ads discussed various aspects of the public discussion of climate change and sought to undermine the justifications for tackling greenhouse gas emissions as unsettled science. The 1997 advertorial below<sup>175</sup> argued that economic analysis of emissions restrictions was faulty and inconclusive and therefore a justification for delaying action on climate change.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>174</sup> Robert Peterson, *A Cleaner Canada in Imperial Oil Review* (1998), http://www.documentcloud.org/documents/2827818-1998-Imperial-Oil-Robert-Peterson-Λ-Cleaner-Canada.html.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>175</sup> Mobil, When Facts Don't Square with the Theory, Throw Out the Facts, N.Y. TIMES, A31 (Aug. 14, 1997), https://www.documentcloud.org/documents/705550-mob-nyt-1997-aug-14-whenfactsdontsquare.html.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

lifor race.

But whom we no locater allow those choices, both civility and common perse will have been diminished. () who was dragged from his sister's car by police officers and shot in the face at point-blank range. The cops

who have the powerto do comething about those officers, but choose out



dinnary I VEN, Canlayer is the offer landle tion oassed pogress by 0-01 13 8 Calci of Acie has store HVOTY INCOM tion is liadil. A CETTE HOUSE

wer his moo testo bude ex wo-thirds of i, good md-SS CAM GRAD-- as it did te stimber

item veto la in Provident. ipled to op-Dévocratic ASHALL MIND re for many nt Chicos hers may ob-Tesident has ine Hem meto of budgetaty STATE IVE ersold badg Promoting []



or appert and ie're miking ולקים לו המושקי e Hutelmyer ad an adfair. icredenly, bus

tes in divorce decades have iven them no theantiquation is state where t Dorothy Hua VICTORY TOP lives, as some I's not even a Only 11 states tion of affec-

to a worder h a jury of her is justified in pporting her

## When facts don't square with the theory. throw out the facts

יעה עם זה פינים אולים

That seems to characterize the administration's attitude on two of its own studies which show that international gid a freque bluco grammew ledolg drup of chore

For morths, the administration—playing its cards close to the vest -- lies promised to alloyide details of the arression reduction plan it will put on the table at the climate change meeting in Kyolo. Japan later this year. It also promised to evaluate the economics at that policy and manaure its impact. Those results are important because the proposals subtitited by other countries thus far would be disjuptive and costly to the U.S.

You when the results from its own economic models were finally earnotated, the adminstration started desarrough teel from the futures and modals trail produced them. The activitished tion 5 top economic advisor said that economic models can't provide a "definitive answer" on the impact of controlling emissions. The effort, she said was "lutes" At best, the models can only provide a "remos of sectordia impacta."

Frankly, we're puzzled. The White House has promised to lay the economic tapts before the public. Yet, the administration's top advisor sad such an analysis won't be based on models and it will "preclude detailed numbers" If you don't provide numbers and don't rely an models. what land of notions aconomic examination call Congress and the public expect?

We're also puzzled by ambivalence over models. The administration powerplays the utility of economic models to forecast cost impacts 10-15 years from now yet its negotiators accept as got of the 50-100 year predictions of global warriving that have been generated by climate models-many of which have been triligized as SEROUSIN Faved

The second study, conducted by Argenta National Laboratory under a contract with the Energy Department, examined what would

happen if the U.S. had to commit to higher energy naces under the emission reduction plane that several nations had advanced last year. Such increases, the report concluded, would result in "algorificant reductions in output and employment" in aix industries-wikuminum. coment, chemical, paper and pulp, petroleum retiring and steel

I-bit hardest, the study noted, would be the chemical industry, with extimutes that up to 30 percent of U.S. whemical manufacturing papacity would move attahore to developing countries. ADD lusses could arrount to some 200,000 in that industry, with another 100,000 in the steel sector. And despote the stubstantial loss of U.S. ebs and manufacturing capacity, thre not emilesion reduction could be insignificant since developing countries will not be bound by the emission targets of a global warming treaty,

Downplaying Argoine's findings, the Energy Department noted that the study used outdated energy prices (mid-1996), didn't reflect the gains that would come from international emissions trading and failed to fuctor in the benefits of accelerated developments in energy efficiency and low-carbon ferthridiogles.

Withat I tailed to mention is just what theise new technologies are and when we can expect their benefits to kick in. As for omissions trading, many economists have theorized about the role they could play in reducing emissions, but lew have grappled with the practicality of implumenting and policing such it scheme.

We applaud the goals the U.S. wants to actions in these upcoming negotiations—namely, triat a final agreenier! must be 'flexible, costeffective, reshetic, echievable and ultimptory global in scope." But until we see the details of the administration a policy, we are concerned that plans are being developed in the absence of ngorous economic analysis. Too much is at stake to simply ignore facts that don't square with preconceived theorem



http://www.motel.com

CHEST DIRECTOR property

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

> In 1998, API, on behalf of Defendants, among other fossil fuel companies and 164.

organizations supported by fossil fuel corporate grants, developed a Global Climate Science

Communications Plan that stated that unless "climate change becomes a non-issue . . . there may

be no moment when we can declare victory for our efforts." Rather, API proclaimed that "[v]ictory

will be achieved when . . . average citizens 'understand' (recognize) uncertainties in climate

science; [and when] recognition of uncertainties becomes part of the 'conventional wisdom." 176

The multi-million-dollar, multi-year proposed budget included public outreach and the

dissemination of educational materials to schools to "begin to erect a barrier against further efforts

to impose Kyoto-like measures in the future" 177 – a blatant attempt to disrupt international efforts,

pursuant to the UNFCCC, to negotiate a treaty that curbed greenhouse gas emissions.

Soon after, API distributed a memo to its members identifying public agreement on

fossil fuel products' role in climate change as its highest priority issue. 178 The memorandum

illuminates API's and Defendants' concern over the potential regulation of Defendants' fossil fuel

products: "Climate is at the center of the industry's business interests. Policies limiting carbon

emissions reduce petroleum product use. That is why it is API's highest priority issue and defined

as 'strategic.'"179 Further, the API memo stresses many of the strategies that Defendants

individually and collectively utilized to combat the perception of their fossil fuel products as

hazardous. These included:

<sup>176</sup> Joe Walker, E-mail to Global Climate Science Team, attaching the Draft Global Science Communications Plan (Apr. 3, 1998), https://assets.documentcloud.org/documents/784572/apiglobal-climate-science-communications-plan.pdf.

<sup>178</sup> Committee on Oversight and Government Reform, Allegations of Political Interference with Government Climate Change Science, 51 (Mar. 19, 2007), https://ia601904.us.archive.org/ 25/items/gov.gpo.fdsys.CHRG-110hhrg37415/CHRG-110hhrg37415.pdf.

179 Id.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

a. Influencing the tenor of the climate change "debate" as a means to establish

that greenhouse gas reduction policies like the Kyoto Protocol were not

necessary to address climate change responsibly;

b. Maintaining strong working relationships between government regulators and

communications-oriented organizations like the Global Climate Coalition, the

Heartland Institute, and other groups carrying Defendants' message

minimizing the hazards of the unabated use of their fossil fuel products and

opposing regulation thereof;

c. Building the case for (and falsely dichotomizing) Defendants' positive

contributions to a "long-term approach" (ostensibly for regulation of their

products) as a reason for society to reject short term fossil fuel emissions

regulations, and engaging in climate change science uncertainty research; and

d. Presenting Defendants' positions on climate change in domestic and

international forums, including by preparing rebuttals to IPCC reports.

166. Additionally, Defendants mounted a campaign against regulation of their business

practices in order to continue placing their fossil fuel products into the stream of commerce, despite

their own knowledge and the growing national and international scientific consensus about the

hazards of doing so. These efforts came despite Defendants' recent recognition that "risks to nearly

every facet of life on Earth . . . could be avoided only if timely steps were taken to address

climate change."180

<sup>180</sup> Nccla Bancrjce, Exxon's Oil Industry Peers Knew About Climate Dangers in the 1970s, Too, supra note 126.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

167. The Global Climate Coalition ("GCC"), on behalf of Defendants and other fossil

fuel companies, funded advertising campaigns and distributed material to generate public

uncertainty around the climate debate, with the specific purpose of preventing U.S. adoption of

the Kyoto Protocol, despite the leading role that the U.S. had played in the Protocol negotiations. 181

Despite an internal primer stating that various "contrarian theories" [i.e., climate change

skepticism] do not "offer convincing arguments against the conventional model of greenhouse gas

emission-induced climate change," GCC excluded this section from the public version of the

backgrounder and instead funded efforts to promote some of those same contrarian theories over

subsequent years. 182

168. A key strategy in Defendants' efforts to discredit scientific consensus on climate

change and the IPCC was to bankroll scientists who, although accredited, held fringe opinions that

were even more questionable given the sources of their research funding. These scientists obtained

part or all of their research budget from Defendants directly or through Defendant-funded

organizations like API, 183 but they frequently failed to disclose their fossil fuel

industry underwriters. 184

169. Creating a false sense of disagreement in the scientific community (despite the

consensus that its own scientists, experts, and managers had previously acknowledged) has had an

181 Id.

182 Gregory J. Dana, Memo to AIAM Technical Committee Re: Global Climate Coalition (GCC) – Primer on Climate Change Science – Final Draft, Association of International Automobile

Manufacturers (Jan. 18, 1996), http://www.webcitation.org/6FyqHawb9.

183 E.g., Willie Soon & Sallie Baliunas, Proxy Climatic and Environmental Changes of the Past

1000 Years, 23 CLIMATE RESEARCH 88, 105 (Jan. 31, 2003), http://www.int-

res.com/articles/cr2003/23/c023p089.pdf.

<sup>184</sup> E.g., Newsdesk, Smithsonian Statement: Dr. Wei-Hock (Willie) Soon, Smithsonian (Feb. 26,

2015), http://newsdcsk.si.cdu/rcleases/smithsonian-statement-dr-wei-hock-willie-soon.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

evident impact on public opinion. A 2007 Yale University-Gallup poll found that while 71% of

Americans personally believed global warming was happening, only 48% believed that there was

a consensus among the scientific community, and 40% believed there was a lot of disagreement

among scientists over whether global warming was occurring. 185

170. 2007 was the same year the IPCC published its Fourth Assessment Report, in which

it concluded that "there is very high confidence that the net effect of human activities since 1750

has been one of warming." 186 The IPCC defined "very high confidence" as at least a 9 out of

10 chance. 187

171. Defendants borrowed pages out of the playbook of prior denialist campaigns. A

"Global Climate Science Team" ("GCST") was created that mirrored a front group created by the

tobacco industry, known as The Advancement of Sound Science Coalition, whose purpose was to

sow uncertainty about the fact that cigarette smoke is carcinogenic. The GCST's membership

included Steve Milloy (a key player on the tobacco industry's front group), Exxon's senior

environmental lobbyist; an API public relations representative; and representatives from Chevron

and Southern Company that drafted API's 1998 Communications Plan. There were no scientists

on the "Global Climate Science Team." GCST developed a strategy to spend millions of dollars

manufacturing climate change uncertainty. Between 2000 and 2004, Exxon donated \$110,000 to

Milloy's efforts and another organization, the Free Enterprise Education Institute and \$50,000 to

<sup>185</sup> American Opinions on Global Warming: A Yale/Gallup/Clearvision Poll, Yale Program on Climate Change Communication (July 31, 2007), http://climatecommunication.yale.edu/publications/american-opinions-on-global-warming.

186 IPCC, Climate Change 2007: The Physical Science Basis. Contribution of Working Group I

to the Fourth Assessment Report of the Intergovernmental Panel on Climate Change (2007), https://www.ipcc.ch/pdf/assessment-report/ar4/wg1/ar4-wg1-spm.pdf.

187 Id.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

the Free Enterprise Action Institute, both registered to Milloy's home address. 188

172. Defendants by and through their trade association memberships, worked directly,

and often in a deliberately obscured manner, to evade regulation of the emissions resulting from

use of their fossil fuel products.

173. Defendants have funded dozens of think tanks, front groups, and industry-

controlled foundations pushing climate change denial. These include the Competitive Enterprise

Institute, the Heartland Institute, Frontiers for Freedom, Committee for a Constructive Tomorrow,

and Heritage Foundation. From 1998 to 2014 ExxonMobil spent almost \$31 million funding

numerous organizations misrepresenting the scientific consensus that Defendants' fossil fuel

products were causing climate change, sea level rise, and injuries to coastal communities,

including Rhode Island. 189 Several Defendants have been linked to other groups that undermine

the scientific basis linking Defendants' fossil fuel products to climate change and sea level rise,

including the Frontiers of Freedom Institute and the George C. Marshall Institute.

174. Exxon acknowledged its own previous success in sowing uncertainty and slowing

mitigation through funding of climate denial groups. In its 2007 Corporate Citizenship Report,

Exxon declared: "In 2008, we will discontinue contributions to several public policy research

groups whose position on climate change could divert attention from the important discussion on

how the world will secure the energy required for economic growth in an environmentally

<sup>188</sup> Seth Shulman et al., Smoke, Mirrors & Hot Air: How ExxonMobil Uses Big Tobacco's Tactics to Manufacture Uncertainty on Climate Science, Union of Concerned Scientists, 19 (Jan. 2007), http://www.ucsusa.org/sites/default/files/legacy/assets/documents/global warming/

exxon report.pdf.

189 ExxonSecrets.org, ExxonMobil Climate Denial Funding 1998–2014 (accessed June 27, 2018),

http://exxonsecrets.org/html/index.php.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

responsible manner." 190 Despite this pronouncement, Exxon remained financially associated with

several such groups after the report's publication.

Today, Defendants, including Exxon, Chevron, BP, Shell, and ConocoPhillips 175.

publicly purport to accept the consensus embodied in the most recent IPCC reports, that global

warming is occurring, and that human activity has been the dominant cause of global warming and

related climactic changes since the beginning of the Great Acceleration. At the same time,

however, Defendants continue to play up the uncertainty of future climate modeling, and the

purported historic uncertainty, imprecision, and inconsistency of climate science to disguise and

distract from their own knowledge and intensive research dating back to at least 1960s. While

Defendants claim to accept the scientific consensus on climate change, moreover, they still

continue to promote and expand their exploration, production, promotion, marketing, and sale of

fossil fuels that are the dominant cause of anthropogenic global warming.

176. Defendants could have contributed to the global effort to mitigate the impacts of

greenhouse gas emissions by, for example delineating practical technical strategies, policy goals,

and regulatory structures that would have allowed them to continue their business ventures while

reducing greenhouse gas emissions and supporting a transition to a lower carbon future. Instead,

Defendants undertook a momentous effort to evade international and national regulation of

greenhouse gas emissions to enable them to continue unabated fossil fuel production.

As a result of Defendants' tortious, misleading conduct, reasonable consumers of 177.

Defendants' fossil fuel products and policy-makers, have been deliberately and unnecessarily

deceived about: the role of fossil fuel products in causing global warming, sea level rise,

disruptions to the hydrologic cycle, and increased extreme precipitation, extreme temperatures,

190 ExxonMobil, 2007 Corporate Citizenship Report (Dec. 31, 2007).

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

and drought; the acceleration of global warming since the mid-20th century and the continuation

thereof; and about the fact that the continued increase in fossil fuel product consumption that

creates severe environmental threats and significant economic costs for coastal communities,

including Rhode Island. Reasonable consumers and policy makers have also been deceived about

the depth and breadth of the state of the scientific evidence on anthropogenic climate change, and

in particular, about the strength of the scientific consensus demonstrating the role of fossil fuels in

causing both climate change and a wide range of potentially destructive impacts, including sea

level rise, disruptions to the hydrologic cycle, extreme precipitation, heatwaves, drought, and

associated consequences.

In Contrast to Their Public Statements, Defendants' Internal Actions J.

Demonstrate Their Awareness of and Intent to Profit from the Unabated Use

of Fossil Fuel Products.

In contrast to their public-facing efforts challenging the validity of the scientific 178.

consensus about anthropogenic climate change, Defendants' acts and omissions evidence their

internal acknowledgement of the reality of climate change and its likely consequences. These

actions include, but are not limited to, making multi-billion-dollar infrastructure investments for

their own operations that acknowledge the reality of coming anthropogenic climate-related change.

These investments include (among others), raising offshore oil platforms to protect against sea

level rise; reinforcing offshore oil platforms to withstand increased wave strength and storm

severity; and developing and patenting designs for equipment intended to extract crude oil and/or

natural gas in areas previously unreachable because of the presence of polar ice sheets. 191

<sup>191</sup> Amy Lieberman & Suzanne Rust, Big Oil braced for global warming while it fought regulations, L.A. TIMES (Dec. 31, 2015), http://graphics.latimes.com/oil-operations.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

179. For example, in 1973 Exxon obtained a patent for a cargo ship capable of breaking

through sea ice<sup>192</sup> and for an oil tanker<sup>193</sup> designed specifically for use in previously unreachable

areas of the Arctic.

180. In 1974, Chevron obtained a patent for a mobile arctic drilling platform designed

to withstand significant interference from lateral ice masses, 194 allowing for drilling in areas with

increased ice floe movement due to elevated temperature.

181. That same year, Texaco (Chevron) worked toward obtaining a patent for a method

and apparatus for reducing ice forces on a marine structure prone to being frozen in ice through

natural weather conditions, 195 allowing for drilling in previously unreachable Arctic areas that

would become seasonally accessible.

182. Shell obtained a patent similar to Texaco's (Chevron) in 1984. 196

183. In 1989, Norske Shell, Royal Dutch Shell's Norwegian subsidiary, altered designs

for a natural gas platform planned for construction in the North Sea to account for anticipated sea

level rise. Those design changes were ultimately carried out by Shell's contractors, adding

substantial costs to the project. 197

<sup>192</sup> Patents, *Icebreaking cargo vessel*, Exxon Research Engineering Co. (Apr. 17, 1973),

https://www.google.com/patents/US3727571.

<sup>193</sup> Patents, *Tanker vessel*, Exxon Research Engineering Co. (July 17, 1973),

https://www.google.com/patents/US3745960.

194 Patents, Arctic offshore platform, Chevron Res (Aug. 27, 1974),

https://www.google.com/patents/US3831385.

<sup>195</sup> Patents, Mobile, arctic drilling and production platform, Texaco Inc. (Feb. 26, 1974),

https://www.google.com/patents/US3793840.

<sup>196</sup> Patents, Arctic offshore platform, Shell Oil Company (Jan. 24, 1984),

https://www.google.com/patents/US4427320.

<sup>197</sup> Greenhouse Effect: Shell Anticipates a Sea Change, N.Y. TIMES (Dec. 20, 1989),

http://www.nytimes.com/1989/12/20/business/greenhouse-effect-shell-anticipates-a-sea-

change.html.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

a. The Troll field, off the Norwegian coast in the North Sea, was proven to

contain large natural oil and gas deposits in 1979, shortly after Norwegian oil

and gas regulators approved Norske Shell to operate a portion of the field.

b. In 1986, the Norwegian parliament granted Norske Shell authority to

complete the first development phase of the Troll field gas deposits, and

Norske Shell began designing the "Troll A" gas platform, with the intent to

begin operation of the platform in approximately 1995. Based on the very

large size of the gas deposits in the Troll field, the Troll A platform was

projected to operate for approximately 70 years.

c. The platform was originally designed to stand approximately 100 feet above

sea level—the amount necessary to stay above waves in a once-in-a-century

strength storm.

d. In 1989, Shell engineers revised their plans to increase the above-water height

of the platform by 3-6 feet, specifically to account for higher anticipated

average sea levels and increased storm intensity due to global warming over

the platform's 70-year operational life. 198

e. Shell projected that the additional 3-6 feet of above-water construction would

increase the cost of the Troll A platform by as much as \$40 million.

K. Defendants' Actions Prevented the Development of Alternatives That Would

Have Eased the Transition to a Less Fossil Fuel Dependent Economy.

184. The harms and benefits of Defendants' conduct can be balanced in part by weighing

the social benefit of extracting and burning a unit of fossil fuels against the costs that a unit of fuel

198 Id.; Amy Lieberman & Suzanne Rust, Big Oil Braced for Global Warming While It Fought

Regulations, L.A. TIMES (Dec. 31, 2015), http://graphics.latimes.com/oil-operations.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

imposes on society, known as the "social cost of carbon" or "SCC."

185. Because climatic responses to atmospheric temperature increases are non-linear, and because greenhouse gas pollution accumulates in the atmosphere, some of which does not dissipate for potentially thousands of years (namely CO<sub>2</sub>), there is broad agreement that SCC increases as emissions rise, and as the climate warms. Relatedly, as atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> levels and surface temperature increase, the costs of remediating any individual environmental injury—for example, infrastructure to mitigate sea level rise, and changes to agricultural processes—also increase. In short, each additional ton of CO<sub>2</sub> emitted into the atmosphere will have a greater net social cost as emissions increase, and each additional ton of CO<sub>2</sub> will have a greater net social cost as global warming accelerates.

186. A critical corollary of the non-linear relationship between atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations and SCC is that delayed efforts to curb those emissions have increased environmental harms and increased the magnitude and cost to remediate harms that have already occurred or are locked in by previous emissions. Therefore, Defendants' campaign to obscure the science of climate change and to expand the extraction and use of fossil fuels greatly increased and continues to increase the harms and rate of harms suffered by the State and the People.

187. The consequences of delayed action on climate change, exacerbated by Defendants' actions, already have drastically increased the cost of mitigating further harm. Had concerted action begun even as late as 2005, an annual 3.5% reduction in CO<sub>2</sub> emissions to lower atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> to 350 ppm by the year 2100 would have restored earth's energy balance<sup>199</sup> and halted future

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>199</sup> "Climate equilibrium" is the balance between Earth's absorption of solar energy and its own energy radiation. Earth is currently out of equilibrium due to the influence of anthropogenic greenhouse gases, which prevent radiation of energy into space. Earth therefore warms and move back toward energy balance. Reduction of global CO<sub>2</sub> concentrations to 350 ppm is necessary to

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

global warming, although such efforts would not forestall committed sea level rise already locked

in. 200 If efforts do not begin until 2020, however, a 15% annual reduction will be required to restore

the Earth's energy balance by the end of the century. <sup>201</sup> Earlier steps to reduce emissions would

have led to smaller—and less disruptive—measures needed to mitigate the impacts of fossil

fuel production.

188. The costs of inaction and the opportunities to confront anthropogenic climate

change and sea level rise caused by normal consumption of their fossil fuel products, were not lost

on Defendants. In a 1997 speech by John Browne, Group Executive for BP America, at Stanford

University, Browne described Defendants' and the entire fossil fuel industry's responsibility and

opportunities to reduce use of fossil fuel products, reduce global CO<sub>2</sub> emissions, and mitigate the

harms associated with the use and consumption of such products:

A new age demands a fresh perspective of the nature of society and responsibility.

We need to go beyond analysis and to take action. It is a moment for change and for a rethinking of corporate responsibility. . . .

IT lhere is now an effective consensus among the world's leading scientists and serious and well informed people outside the scientific community that there is a discernible human influence on the climate, and a link between the concentration of carbon dioxide and the increase in temperature.

The prediction of the IPCC is that over the next century temperatures might rise by a further 1 to 3.5 degrees centigrade  $[1.8^{\circ} - 6.3^{\circ}]$  F], and that sea levels might rise by between 15 and 95 centimeters [5.9 and 37.4 inches]. Some of that impact is probably unavoidable, because it results from current emissions. . . .

re-achieve energy balance, if the aim is to stabilize climate without further global warming and attendant sea level rise. See James Hansen et al., Assessing "Dangerous Climate Change:" Required Reduction of Carbon Emissions to Protect Young People, Future Generations and Nature, 8 PLOS ONE 1, 4–5 (Dec. 3, 2013), http://journals.plos.org/plosone/ article?id=10.1371/journal.pone.0081648.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>200</sup> James Hansen et al., Assessing "Dangerous Climate Change:" Required Reduction of Carbon Emissions to Protect Young People, Future Generations and Nature, 8 PLOS ONE 1, 10 (Dec. 3, 2013), http://journals.plos.org/plosone/article?id=10.1371/journal.pone.0081648. 201 Id.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

[I]t would be unwise and potentially dangerous to ignore the mounting concern.

The time to consider the policy dimensions of climate change is not when the link between greenhouse gases and climate change is conclusively proven ... but when the possibility cannot be discounted and is taken seriously by the society of which we are part. . . .

We [the fossil fuel industry] have a responsibility to act, and I hope that through our actions we can contribute to the much wider process which is desirable and necessary.

BP accepts that responsibility and we're therefore taking some specific steps.

To control our own emissions.

To fund continuing scientific research.

To take initiatives for joint implementation.

To develop alternative fuels for the long term.

And to contribute to the public policy debate in search of the wider global answers to the problem."<sup>202</sup>

with the unabated consumption and use of their fossil fuel products, and despite the existence and Defendants' knowledge of technologies and practices that could have helped to reduce the foreseeable dangers associated with their fossil fuel products, Defendants continued to market and promote heavy fossil fuel use, dramatically increasing the cost of abatement. At all relevant times, Defendants were deeply familiar with opportunities to reduce the use of their fossil fuel products, reduce global CO<sub>2</sub> emissions associated therewith, and mitigate the harms associated with the use and consumption of such products. Examples of that recognition include, but are not limited to

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>202</sup> John Browne, *BP Climate Change Speech to Stanford*, Climate Files (May 19, 1997), http://www.climatefiles.com/bp/bp-climate-change-speech-to-stanford.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

the following:

a. In 1963, Esso (Exxon) obtained multiple patents on technologies for fuel

cells, including on the design of a fuel cell and necessary electrodes,  $^{203}$  and

on a process for increasing the oxidation of a fuel, specifically methanol, to

produce electricity in a fuel cell.204

b. In 1970, Esso (ExxonMobil) obtained a patent for a "low-polluting engine

and drive system" that used an interburner and air compressor to reduce

pollutant emissions, including CO2 emissions, from gasoline combustion

engines (the system also increased the efficiency of the fossil fuel products

used in such engines, thereby lowering the amount of fossil fuel product

necessary to operate engines equipped with this technology).<sup>205</sup>

190. Defendants could have made major inroads to mitigate the State's injuries through

technology by developing and employing technologies to capture and sequester greenhouse gases

emissions associated with conventional use of their fossil fuel products. Defendants had

knowledge dating at least back to the 1960s, and indeed, internally researched and perfected many

such technologies. For instance:

a. The first patent for enhanced oil recovery technology, a process by which CO2

is captured and reinjected into oil deposits, was granted to an ARCO (BP)

<sup>203</sup> Patents, *Fuel cell and fuel cell electrodes*, Exxon Research Engineering Co. (Dec. 31, 1963), https://www.google.com/patents/US3116169.

intps://www.googic.com/patents/035110109.

204 Patents, Direct production of electrical energy from liquid fuels, Exxon Research Engineering

Co. (Dec. 3, 1963), https://www.google.com/patents/US3113049.

<sup>205</sup> Patents, Low-polluting engine and drive system, Exxon Research Engineering Co. (May 16,

1970), https://www.google.com/patents/US3513929.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Submitted: //2/2018 9:57 . Envelope: 1610605

Reviewer: Alexa G.

subsidiary in 1952.<sup>206</sup> This technology could have been further developed as

a carbon capture and sequestration technique;

b. Phillips Petroleum Company (ConocoPhillips) obtained a patent in 1966 for

a "Method for recovering a purified component from a gas" outlining a

process to remove carbon from natural gas and gasoline streams;<sup>207</sup> and

c. In 1973, Shell was granted a patent for a process to remove acidic gases,

including CO2, from gaseous mixtures.

191. Despite this knowledge, Defendants did not commit to or follow through on later

forays into the alternative energy sector. For instance, in 2001, Chevron developed and shared a

sophisticated information management system to gather greenhouse gas emissions data from its

explorations and production to help regulate and set reduction goals.<sup>208</sup> Beyond this technological

breakthrough, Chevron touted "profitable renewable energy" as part of its business plan for several

years and launched a 2010 advertising campaign promoting the company's move towards

renewable energy. Despite all this, Chevron rolled back its renewable and alternative energy

projects in 2014.<sup>209</sup>

<sup>206</sup> James P. Meyer, *Summary of Carbon Dioxide Enhanced Oil Recovery (CO<sub>2</sub>EOR) Injection Well Technology*, American Petroleum Institute, 1, http://www.api.org/~/media/Files/EHS/climate-change/Summary-carbon-dioxide-enhanced-oil-recovery-well-tech.pdf.

<sup>207</sup> Patents, *Method for recovering a purified component from a gas*, Phillips Petroleum Co (Jan. 11, 1966), https://www.google.com/patents/US3228874.

<sup>208</sup> Chevron, Chevron Press Release – Chevron Introduces New System to Manage Energy Use (Sept. 25, 2001)

(Sept. 25, 2001).

<sup>209</sup> Ben janin Elgin, *Chevron Dims the Lights on Green Power*, Bloomberg (May 29, 2014), https://www.bloomberg.com/news/articles/2014-05-29/chevron-dims-the-lights-on-renewable-

energy-projects.

Cultural the de 7/0/0040 0.57 AM

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

192. Likewise, while Shell orchestrated an entire public relations campaign around

energy transitions towards net zero emissions, a fine-print disclaimer in its 2016 net-zero pathways

report reads: "We have no immediate plans to move to a net-zero emissions portfolio over our

investment horizon of 10-20 years."210

193. BP, appearing to abide by the representations Lord Browne made in his speech

described in paragraph 188, above, engaged in a rebranding campaign to convey an air of

environmental stewardship and renewable energy to its consumers. This included renouncing its

membership in the GCC in 2007, changing its name from "British Petroleum" to "BP" while

adopting the slogan "Beyond Petroleum," and adopting a conspicuously green corporate logo.

However, BP's self-touted "alternative energy" investments during this turnaround included

investments in natural gas, a fossil fuel, and in 2007 the company reinvested in Canadian tar sands,

a particularly high-carbon source of oil.<sup>211</sup> The company ultimately abandoned its wind and solar

assets in 2011 and 2013, respectively, and even the "Beyond Petroleum" moniker in 2013. 212

194. After posting a \$10 billion quarterly profit, Exxon in 2005 stated that "We're an oil

and gas company. In times past, when we tried to get into other businesses, we didn't do it well.

We'd rather re-invest in what we know."213

195. Even if Defendants did not adopt technological or energy source alternatives that

would have reduced use of fossil fuel products, reduced global greenhouse gas pollution, and/or

mitigated the harms associated with the use and consumption of such products, Defendants could

<sup>210</sup> Energy Transitions Towards Net Zero Emissions (NZE), Shell (2016).

<sup>211</sup> Fred Pearce, *Greenwash: BP and the Myth of a World 'Beyond Petroleum'*, THE GUARDIAN, (Nov. 20, 2008), https://www.theguardian.com/environment/2008/nov/20/fossilfuels-energy.

<sup>212</sup> Javier E. David, 'Beyond Petroleum' No More? BP Goes Back to Basics, CNBC (Apr. 20,

2013), http://www.cnbc.com/id/100647034.

<sup>213</sup> James R. Healy, Alternate Energy Not in Cards at ExxonMobil (Oct. 28, 2005),

https://usatoday30.usatoday.com/money/industries/energy/2005-10-27-oil-invest-usat x.htm.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

have taken other practical, cost-effective steps to reduce the use of their fossil fuel products, reduce

global greenhouse gas pollution associated therewith, and mitigate the harms associated with the

use and consumption of such products. These alternatives could have included, among

other measures:

a. Accepting scientific evidence on the validity of anthropogenic climate change

and the damages it will cause people and communities, including Plaintiff,

and the environment. Mere acceptance of that information would have altered

the debate from whether to combat climate change and sea level rise to how

to combat it; and avoided much of the public confusion that has ensued over

nearly 30 years, since at least 1988;

b. Forthrightly communicating with Defendants' shareholders, banks, insurers,

the public, regulators and Plaintiff about the global warming and sea level rise

hazards of Defendants' fossil fuel products that were known to Defendants,

would have enabled those groups to make material, informed decisions about

whether and how to address climate change and sea level rise vis-à-vis

Defendants' products;

c. Refraining from affirmative efforts, whether directly, through coalitions, or

through front groups, to distort public debate, and to cause many consumers

and business and political leaders to think the relevant science was far less

certain than it actually was;

d. Sharing their internal scientific research with the public, and with other

scientists and business leaders, so as to increase public understanding of the

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

scientific underpinnings of climate change and its relation to Defendants'

fossil fuel products;

e. Supporting and encouraging policies to avoid dangerous climate change, and

demonstrating corporate leadership in addressing the challenges of

transitioning to a low-carbon economy;

f. Prioritizing alternative sources of energy through sustained investment

and research on renewable energy sources to replace dependence on

Defendants' inherently hazardous fossil fuel products;

g. Adopting their shareholders' concerns about Defendants' need to protect their

businesses from the inevitable consequences of profiting from their fossil fuel

products. Over the period of 1990-2015, Defendants' shareholders proposed

hundreds of resolutions to change Defendants' policies and business practices

regarding climate change. These included increasing renewable energy

investment, cutting emissions, and performing carbon risk assessments,

among others.

196. Despite their knowledge of the foreseeable harms associated with the consumption

of Defendants' fossil fuel products, and despite the existence and fossil fuel industry knowledge

of opportunities that would have reduced the foreseeable dangers associated with those products,

Defendants wrongfully promoted, campaigned against regulation of, and concealed the hazards of

use of their fossil fuel products.

L. Defendants Caused Rhode Island's Injuries.

197. Defendants, individually and collectively, extracted a substantial percentage of all

raw fossil fuels recovered globally since 1965. Defendants also individually and collectively

manufactured, promoted, marketed, and sold a substantial percentage of all fossil fuel products

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

used and combusted during that period. Defendants further played leadership roles in campaigns

to deny the link between their products and the adverse effects of global warming, to avoid

regulation, and to stifle transition away from fossil fuels that would reduce the carbon footprint

affecting the world climate system.

198. CO<sub>2</sub> emissions attributable to fossil fuels that Defendants extracted from the Earth

and injected into the market are responsible for a substantial percentage of greenhouse gas

pollution since 1965.

Defendants' individual and collective conduct, including, but not limited to, their 199.

extraction, refining, and/or formulation of fossil fuel products; their introduction of fossil fuel

products into the stream of commerce; their wrongful promotion of their fossil fuel products and

concealment of known hazards associated with use of those products; and their failure to pursue

less hazardous alternatives available to them; is a substantial factor in causing the increase in global

mean temperature and consequent increase in global mean sea surface height and disruptions to

the hydrologic cycle, including, but not limited to, more frequent and extreme droughts, more

frequent and extreme precipitation events, more frequent and extreme heat waves, and the

associated consequences of those physical and environmental changes, since 1965.

200. Defendants have actually and proximately caused sea levels to rise, increased the

destructive impacts of storm surges, increased coastal erosion, exacerbated the onshore impact of

regular tidal ebb and flow, caused saltwater intrusion, disrupted the hydrologic cycle, caused

increased frequency and severity of drought, caused increased frequency and severity of extreme

precipitation events, caused increased frequency and severity of heat waves, and caused

consequent social and economic injuries associated with the aforementioned physical and

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

environmental impacts, among other impacts, resulting in inundation, destruction, and/or other

interference with the State's property and citizenry.

Rhode Island has already incurred, and will foreseeably continue to incur, injuries 201.

and harms from sea level rise; increased ambient temperatures and extreme heat days; disruptions

to the hydrologic cycle including increased frequency and severity of drought; increased frequency

and severity of extreme precipitation events; and social and economic harms associated with those

physical and environmental changes, all of which have been caused and/or exacerbated by

Defendants' conduct.

Sea level rise has created and will continue to create significant impacts attributable 202.

to Defendants' conduct.

203. The State of Rhode Island is particularly vulnerable to the impacts of sea level rise

because of its long coastline, substantial low-lying land area, and extensive coastal development.

204. Under a seven-feet sea level rise scenario, ocean water will inundate approximately

seventeen square miles of land along Rhode Island's Narragansett Bay coastline, encompassing

3,765 buildings and the residences of over 10,000 people.<sup>214</sup> The figure below depicts inundated

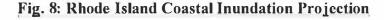
structures during a 100-year storm event with seven feet of sea level rise.

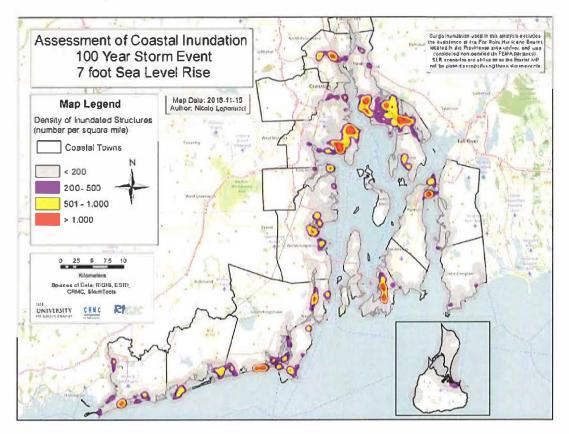
<sup>214</sup> Narragansett Bay Estuary Program, supra note 81, at 22; see also STORMTOOLS,

http://www.beachsamp.org/stormtools.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.





- 205. The impacts of sea level rise will occur unevenly across the state depending on local factors including location, natural features, and development. The lower Taunton River watershed is especially vulnerable to sea level rise, for example, because of its shallow slopes.
- 206. Sea level rise endangers major public and private property and infrastructure by causing coastal flooding of low-lying areas, erosion, salinity intrusion, and storm surges. Critical facilities, existing roadways, wastewater treatment facilities, residential neighborhoods, industrial areas including ports, highways, rail lines, emergency response routes and facilities, beaches, and parks have suffered and/or will suffer injuries due to sea level rise expected by the end of this century.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

> 207. The State will experience continuing significant and dangerous sea level rise

through at least the end of this century, <sup>215</sup> and those increases in sea level will accelerate over time.

The State will suffer greater overall sea level rise than the global average.<sup>216</sup> and even if all carbon

emissions ceased, Rhode Island would still experience greater committed sea level rise in the future

due to the "locked in" greenhouse gases already emitted.<sup>217</sup>

In addition to direct damage to State property, infrastructure, and natural resources, 208.

sea level rise will require the State to expend resources to disseminate flood risk information to

communities; set new policies, such as building regulations to account for increased risks; to invest

in adaptive measures such as raising or relocating coastal roads and structures; and/or to invest in

defensive measures such as seawalls or levees to prevent property damage. 218 By the end of the

century, 6,660 Rhode Island coastal properties, worth roughly \$3.6 billion, will be at risk under a

high-sea level rise scenario, reducing property tax revenue by as much as \$47.8 million. 219 That

lost tax revenue could in turn reduce resources available to the State to prevent and mitigate further

the harms suffered by Rhode Island municipalities. Even with resiliency measures in place under

a low emissions scenario, coastal properties will face increased flooding risk and associated harms,

and depression in property value. 220

<sup>215</sup> Erika Spanger-Siegfried et al., Union of Concerned Scientists, supra note 9, at 10–11.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>216</sup> Rhode Island Department of Health, Rhode Island Climate Change and Resiliency Report, supra note 55, at 10.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>217</sup> Peter U. Clark et al., *supra* note 44, at 363–65.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>218</sup> Union of Concerned Scientists, *Underwater: Rising Seas, Chronic Floods, and the* Implications for US Coastal Real Estate, 16–17 (June 2018), https://www.ucsusa.org/underwater.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>219</sup> Union of Concerned Scientists, *Underwater: Rising Seas, Chronic Floods, and the* Implications for US Coastal Real Estate, "Complete data by state" (June 2018), https://www.ucsusa.org/sites/default/files/attach/2018/06/underwater-data-by-state.xlsx.

<sup>220</sup> See id.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

> 209. Furthermore, Rhode Island has experienced and will continue to experience injuries

due to changes in the hydrologic cycle caused by Defendants' conduct. Increased intensity and

frequency of storms results in flooding and erosion and impacts transportation, infrastructure,

businesses, homes, and public health. Dry extremes impact water supply, infrastructure and

public health.

More frequent and intense storms, including Nor'easters (extra-tropical storms), 210.

and "bomb cyclones" riding on top of rising seas, are contributing to coastal flooding that is as

damaging as flooding typically associated with hurricanes.<sup>221</sup> Under a 3-foot rise in sea level, even

a Nor'easter could submerge coastal areas of the state, including areas sufficient to cut off the

southwestern peninsula of Newport, RI from the mainland.<sup>222</sup>

211. The state's coastline is highly vulnerable to flood damage from winter storms and

hurricanes. In October 2012, Superstorm Sandy (a post-tropical storm) caused a storm surge 9.4

feet above normal high tide in Providence, resulting in extensive flooding.<sup>223</sup> One year earlier,

heavy rainfall and strong southeast winds—up to 70 mph—from Hurricane Irene knocked down

power lines, leaving half of Rhode Island's one million residents without power.<sup>224</sup>

212. Sea level rise, changes to the hydrologic cycle, and increased air and ocean

temperatures resulting from anthropogenic climate change have and will result in injury to public,

industrial, commercial, and residential assets within the State either directly, or through secondary

and tertiary impacts that cause the State to expend resources in resiliency planning, responding to

these impacts, and repairing infrastructure damage; lost revenue due to decreased economic

<sup>221</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 15.

<sup>222</sup> Rhode Island Department of Health, Rhode Island Climate Change and Resiliency Report, supra note 55, at 10.

<sup>223</sup> NOAA National Centers for Environmental Information, *supra* note 83, at 2.

224 Id.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

activity in the State; injury to natural resources which the State holds in trust for the use and

enjoyment of the people of the State; and cause the State to suffer other injuries. Among the

properties and natural resources in the State that have and/or will be injured as a result of

anthropogenic climate change are:

a. Roads and Bridges: With over 400 miles of coastline and large inland watersheds,

Rhode Island's transportation and transit infrastructure (roads, bridges, intermodal

facilities, culverts, etc.) is vulnerable to sea level rise and flooding.<sup>225</sup> Much of the

State's extensive network of roads, bridges, and parking areas are state owned or

maintained. Rhode Island's transportation system Federal regulations require the

state to engage in asset management to weigh climate change risks (among

others).<sup>226</sup> According to an analysis conducted in 2016 (that excluded riverine

flooding), 175 miles of roadway will be exposed with seven feet of sea level rise.

In a storm surge event with seven feet of sea level rise, 573 miles of roadway will

be exposed, over 200 additional miles of roadway over a similar surge at today's

sea level.<sup>227</sup> Riverine inundation will present additional challenge to the State's

transportation infrastructure. 228 Ten of the most vulnerable segments of roads under

state jurisdiction are projected to experience daily high tide flooding at either one

or three feet of sea level rise, and all but one are hurricanc evacuation routes.<sup>229</sup> In

<sup>225</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 32.

<sup>226</sup> Id.

<sup>227</sup> Id. at 33

228 Id.

<sup>229</sup> Rhode Island Statewide Planning Program, Vulnerability of Transportation Assets to Sea

Level Rise, 11-12 (Jan. 2015).

c.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

addition, 90 bridges are vulnerable to sea level rise, and 148 bridges vulnerable to

storm surge. 230 Increased flooding of coastal roads, evacuation routes, and bridges

creates the risk of coastal populations becoming trapped with no means of accessing

emergency services during high tides and storm surge events.<sup>231</sup> Rising

temperatures and more frequent extreme weather events also contribute to

degradation of roads and bridges increasing maintenance and repair costs.

b. Other Transportation Infrastructure. Sea level rise will also impact railroad

systems. Several rail segments will be flooded under three- and five-foot sea level

rise scenarios, including portions of the Newport Secondary, a state-owned track. 232

Sea level rise and increased flooding will also impact the State's statewide bus

network, both disrupting service and requiring relocation of a number of stops and

the Newport Gateway hub to upland locations.<sup>233</sup>

Energy Infrastructure: Rhode Island has experienced many severe weather-

related events over the last eight years, including floods, blizzards, extended heat

waves, extreme cold snaps and hurricanes. One of the most direct energy security

impacts of major storm events is power outages. Power outages result in direct costs

to repair damaged or flooded infrastructure or downed poles and wires and to

restore service, indirect costs such as lost business and tax revenue, and health

<sup>230</sup> Rhode Island Statewide Planning Program, *Vulnerability of Municipal Transportation Assets* to Sea Level Rise and Storm Surge, 21 (Sept. 28, 2016).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>231</sup> Rhode Island Sea Grant et al., *Sea Level Rise in Rhode Island: Trends and Impacts*, 4 (Jan. 2013), http://www.beachsamp.org/wp-content/uploads/2016/09/climate SLR factsheet2013.pdf.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>232</sup> Rhode Island Statewide Planning Program, *Vulnerability of Transportation Assets to Sea Level Rise*, 12 (Jan. 2015).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>233</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 35–36.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

d.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

impacts from loss of electricity and air conditioning. <sup>234</sup> Increased extreme heat

days also put stress on the state's electricity grid, by requiring increased air

conditioning. State agencies are playing key roles in overseeing energy assurance

and resiliency in Rhode Island. 235

Dams: The state has 668 inventoried dams, 96 of which are classified as "high

hazard" (meaning that failure or mis-operation will result in probable loss of human

life) and 81 of which are classified as "significant hazard" (meaning failure can

cause major economic loss, disrupt critical facilities or infrastructure, or detriment

public's health, safety or welfare).236 The Rhode Island Department of

Environmental Management (RIDEM) has the statutory duty to inspect dams and

to take necessary action to make dams safe. RIDEM is in the process of studying

hazardous dams to determine what actions are necessary to withstand a 500-year

storm event.<sup>237</sup>

e. Ports: Maritime transportation, including through the Port of Providence and Port

of Galilee, serves a critical role in the Rhode Island economy by providing access

to products, raw materials, and export revenue. Numerous ancillary businesses

depend on the ports' functionality. The Port of Providence alone generated more

than \$200 million in economic benefits for the region and over 2,400 jobs. The

State's conumercial fishing industry generates approximately \$200 million in

annual sales and supports about 7,000 jobs. Impacts of climate change on fishing

<sup>234</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 28–29.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>235</sup> Id. at 29.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>236</sup> Id. at 23.

<sup>237</sup> Id.

f.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

resources, including flooding from major storms and associated damage and

closure of fisheries and loss of profitable aquatic species, have caused and will

cause both short and long-term disruptions in the Rhode Island economy, causing

the State to lose revenue. The State is actively engaged in studying resilience of its

ports and informing the public to encourage long-term planning.<sup>238</sup>

Beaches: Coastal beaches and barriers are dynamic systems that define much of

Rhode Island's south-facing shore and are popular recreational destinations for both

residents and out-of-state visitors. Climate change has and will subject beaches to

increased storm surge, erosion, coastal flooding and sea level rise. The State owns

numerous beaches open for public use and enjoyment. Beaches will migrate

landward and if impeded by development will narrow or disappear altogether,

reducing the area available for public recreation and tourism, and affecting habitats

for plants and for birds migrating or nesting on shore.<sup>239</sup> Because bacteria grows

more quickly in warm water, warming ocean temperatures will result in increased

beach closures.<sup>240</sup> As a result of climate change the State will lose real property to

inundation and flooding and revenue from decreased tourism and use of Rhode

Island beaches. The State is expending resources to analysis coastal adaptations

strategies to protect beaches and dunes.

g. Water Supply: Sea level rise and increased summer and fall droughts will stress

Rhode Island's water supply.<sup>241</sup> Reduced seasonal precipitation will increase public

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>238</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 26–27.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>239</sup>Rhode Island Sea Grant et al., Sea Level Rise in Rhode Island: Trends and Impacts, 4 (Jan.

<sup>2013),</sup> http://www.beachsamp.org/wp-content/uploads/2016/09/climate SLR factsheet2013.pdf.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>240</sup> Narragansett Bay Estuary Program, *supra* note 81, at 20.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>241</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 20.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

reliance on groundwater sources to provide drinking water, and simultaneously

slow replenishment of groundwater aquifers. At the same time, sea level rise will

result in saltwater intruding into coastal groundwater aquifers and wells,

contaminating drinking water resources.<sup>242</sup> This is a large concern for southern

Rhode Island, which relies heavily on coastal ground water supplies.<sup>243</sup> For

example, Aquidneck Island's primary reservoir is highly vulnerable to storm surge

from hurricanes and coastal storm events.<sup>244</sup> Sea level rise and storm events can

also result in or exacerbate intrusion into drinking water systems by toxic and

hazardous substances that are dangerous to human health. Many brownfield and

superfund sites within the State susceptible to climate impacts are located next to

water bodies which they may contaminate if disturbed.<sup>245</sup>

Wastewater Management: The State is home to nineteen major wastewater

treatment facilities and over 250 pumping stations to transport sewage to these

systems. Most of these wastewater systems are located in floodplains to take

advantage of gravity fed flows. 246 Sea level rise, and increased flooding and storms

associated with climate change will exceed infrastructure capacity, overwhelming

and submerging infrastructure, including pipelines, wastewater pumping stations

and treatment systems.<sup>247</sup> Treatment systems and pumping stations will require

upgrades to withstand future conditions, and the State has already begun requiring

242 Id.

<sup>243</sup> SafeWater RI, Ensuring Water for Rhode Island's Future, supra note 78, at 11.

<sup>244</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 19.

<sup>245</sup> *Id.* at 63.

h.

246 Id. at 21.

<sup>247</sup> SafeWater R1, Ensuring Water for Rhode Island's Future, supra note 78, at 14.

i.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

resiliency analysis as part of major wastewater treatment facility permit

reissuances. Local authorities will need to assess local conditions and take

necessary steps to improve resilience of wastewater treatment infrastructure.

Stormwater/Flood Management Infrastructure: More frequent and more

intense extreme weather events and flooding will damage the States' stormwater

infrastructure, which was not designed to withstand the intense storms and floods

that will become more common with climate change. Climate change is already

challenging capacity and performance of these drainage systems.<sup>248</sup> As storn

patterns change, they will exceed existing capacity of local stormwater

infrastructure. Overburdened and inadequate stormwater infrastructure will result

likely release pathogens and other pollutants during storm events, causing property

damage, water quality impairments, beach closures, closure of shellfish growing

areas, and other public health risks.<sup>249</sup> Given the extensive network of State-owned

or maintained roads, bridges, and parking areas within Rhode Island, the Rhode

Island Department of Transportation ("RIDOT") has significant responsibilities for

stormwater management. RIDOT manages stormwater infrastructure that includes

an estimated 25,000 catch basins and 3,800 outfalls. RIDOT has recently embarked

on a ten-year strategic program to improve stormwater management consistent with

a federal consent decree issued in 2015.250 The State lacks adequate funding to

<sup>248</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 24.

249 Id.

<sup>250</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 25.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

support necessary retrofitting and ongoing maintenance of the stormwater infrastructure, in particular under a high-emission scenario.<sup>251</sup>

- j. Residential and Commercial Property: Sea level rise and extreme weather events have harmed and will harm residential and commercial property. Λ study evaluating the State's 21 coastal communities found that with 3 feet of sea level rise, over 300 homes will be in the inundation zone. With 7 feet of sea level rise, over 4,000 occupied residential units and 800 commercial units would be within the inundation zone. Indeed, over fifty percent of the State's parcels lie within or touch the flood plain. These properties are particularly vulnerable to inundation and flooding due to extreme weather events and sea level rise. The city of Newport alone contains hundreds of businesses and historic properties lining its waterfront. Like many older cities in the State, Newport was built on landfill placed into large portions of Narragansett Bay, placing it only slightly above sea-level.
- k. Aquatic Resources: Laboratory studies have already shown ocean acidification reduces the survival of larval finfish and shellfish. Ocean acidification will impact ocean food webs and economically important organisms such as shellfish in the

<sup>251</sup> Id.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>252</sup> Rhode Island State Planning Program, *Socioeconomics of Sea Level Rise Technical Paper 168*, 15 & 18 (Sept. 2015),

http://www.planning.ri.gov/documents/sea\_level/socio/Technical%20Paper%20168.pdf. <sup>253</sup> *Id* 

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>254</sup> Final Report: Special House Commission to Study Economic Risk Due to Flooding and Sea Level Rise, 31 (May 12, 2016),

http://www.rilin.state.ri.us/commissions/fsrcomm/commdocs/20160512%20Economic%20Risk%20Due%20to%20Flooding%20and%20Sea%20Level%20Rise%20-%20final.pdf.

1.

Cubasitta da 7/0/0040 0.57 AM

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

coastal environment.<sup>255</sup> In addition, shellfish perform important ecological

functions, such as removing nutrients and bacteria from the water. Consequently,

decreased shellfish populations may result in a positive feedback loop, further

decreasing marine water quality in Rhode Island. Warmer ocean temperatures

associated with climate change are also harming ocean ecosystems. The fisheries

of Narragansett Bay are changing from being dominated by bottom dwelling fish

and invertebrates to being dominated by fish that occur throughout the water

column.<sup>256</sup> Warmer ocean temperatures also impact the abundance and diversity of

phytoplankton, resulting in changes across the food web, including reduction in

seagrass that helps cycle nutrients, stabilize marine sediment and provides critical

habitat to ecologically and economically valuable species.<sup>257</sup> Warming

temperatures and acidification not only harm natural resources, but also harm the

industries that rely on them, including fishing and tourism, thus injuring the State's

economy and reducing tax revenue. Rhode Island is ranked seventh in the nation in

economic dependence on shellfishing.

Marshes and Coastal Wetlands: Sea level rise will cause changes in coastal

habitats that are important centers of biodiversity. Salt marshes provide critical

habitat for fish and shellfish. Vegetated coastal wetlands perform critical ecosystem

functions and have been shown to reduce storm surge duration and height by

<sup>255</sup> Stephanie C. Talmage & Christopher J. Gobler, "Effects of past, present, and future ocean carbon dioxide concentrations on the growth and survival of larval shellfish," 107 PROCEEDINGS OF THE NATIONAL ACADEMY OF SCIENCES 17246–17251 (Oct. 2010), http://www.pnas.org/content/107/40/17246.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>256</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 15.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>257</sup> Narragansett Bay Estuary Program, *supra* note 81, at 20.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605

Reviewer: Alexa G.

providing a storage reservoir for encroaching water. For example, areas that

contained wetlands had an average of 10% reduction in damages from Hurricane

Sandy when compared to those without wetlands, and coastal wetlands were

predicted to have reduced wave heights during the storm across 80% of the

Northeastern coastal floodplain.<sup>258</sup> Salt marshes will either drown or migrate

landward as a consequence of sea level rise.<sup>259</sup> With only one foot of sea level rise

in Rhode Island, 13% of the state's remaining salt marshes will be lost. At five feet,

lost salt marsh ecosystems will increase to 83% resulting in substantial loss of

critical ecosystem functions and increased threats from storms to

coastal property.<sup>260</sup>

m. Terrestrial Natural Resources: Warmer temperatures also impact terrestrial

species. In southern New England, including Rhode Island, spring is arriving

sooner and leaf-out (the period when trees produce new leaves) and flowering is

occurring earlier each year. Changes in the timing of leaf-out, flowering, and

fruiting in plants can be very disruptive to plant pollinators and seed dispersers.<sup>261</sup>

Warmer temperatures are also impacting the timing of migratory cycles in birds. <sup>262</sup>

213. The State has incurred and will continue to incur expenses in planning, preparing

for, and treating the public health impacts associated with anthropogenic global warming. Rhode

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>258</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 42.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>259</sup> Id. at 15.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>260</sup> Frank Carini ,*Rhode Island Losing Ground in Battle Against Sea-Level Rise*, Ecori News (Feb. 17, 2018), https://www.ecori.org/climate-change/2018/2/16/rhode-island-losing-ground-in-battle-against-sea-level-rise.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>261</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 15.

<sup>262</sup> Id.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

Islanders are more likely to seek emergency on hotter days. On days when the temperatures reach

90°F, hospitalizations in the State for heat and dehydration increase 60% amongst those aged

between 18 and 64, compared to the hospitalization rate on 80°F days. 263 Climate models predict

that ambient surface temperature will increase by an average of 1.6°F by 2022, resulting in 378

more emergency department visits due to extreme heat in the months of April through October. 264

Vulnerable populations such as the disabled, elderly, children, communities of color, and low

income are more likely to suffer health effects from high air temperatures. 265 Increased prevalence

of vector-borne diseases, increased pollution, and increased airborne allergens caused by increased

surface temperatures will further contribute to increased hospitalizations in the State.

Rhode Island will shoulder a portion of the costs for increased hospitalizations to 214.

treat recipients of State-funded medical insurance.

To address heat-related illnesses, the State is incurring expenses planting and

maintaining trees in urban centers as an adaptive strategy to provide cooling and shade. 266 Climate

change complicates the care for urban forests by increasing extreme weather events and invasive

plants and pests.<sup>267</sup>

Increased incidents of extreme weather have still more public health consequences, 216.

including danger to personal safety, economic disruption, and population displacement.<sup>268</sup> As

climate change impacts and severe weather events increase, they will place greater demands on

<sup>263</sup> Rhode Island Department of Health, Rhode Island Climate Change and Resiliency Report,

supra note 55, at 20.

<sup>264</sup> Id. at 10.

<sup>265</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 13.

<sup>266</sup> Resilient Rhody: Statewide Climate Resilience Action Strategy, supra note 56, at 47.

267 Id

<sup>268</sup> *Id.* at 62–63.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

emergency response and sheltering services. The Rhode Island Emergency Management Agency

("RIEMA") has already incurred costs to improve the State's resiliency to future disasters through

planning and preparedness activities, trainings, and adaptation programs.<sup>269</sup>

217. Rhode Island is undertaking extensive planning efforts across State agencies, as

well as funding independent research efforts, to assess the State's vulnerability to a broad range of

anticipated climate change related impacts, and to develop adaptation and resilience strategies. For

example, the State has conducted studies to ensure drinking water supplies will be adequate to

meet the State's future needs. 270 RIDOT has also funded researchers to conduct a vulnerability and

resilience strategy assessment of maritime infrastructure.271 Execution of these research and

planning projects have come at a substantial cost to the State, and State will continue to incur

substantial costs for these and similar projects.

218. The State has incurred significant expenses educating and engaging the public to

better understand climate change, and promoting community involvement in actions to reduce

climate change risks. These efforts include by educating vulnerable populations about the public

health impacts of extreme heat waves (such as heat stroke), drought (diminished water supply),

and other climate change-related impacts. Implementation of these planning and public outreach

processes represent substantial cost to the State.

219. As a direct and proximate result of Defendants' acts and omissions alleged herein,

Rhode Island has incurred significant expenses related to predicting and planning for future climate

change-related injuries to its real property, natural resources, and improvements thereon; State-

<sup>269</sup> Id. at 53.

<sup>270</sup> Id. at 20.

<sup>271</sup> Hurricane Resilience: Long Range Planning for the Port of Providence, The University of

Rhode Island, https://www.portofprovidenceresilience.org.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

owned or operated infrastructure; citizens; and other community assets, to preemptively mitigate

and/or prevent injuries to itself and the public.

220. As a direct and proximate result of Defendants' acts and omissions alleged herein,

Rhode Island has incurred sea level risc-related, extreme heat-related, and hydrologic regime

change-related injuries and harms. These include, but are not limited to, infrastructural repair,

planning costs, and response costs to flooding and other acute incidents.

221. As a direct and proximate result of Defendants' acts and omissions alleged herein,

Rhode Island has been inundated by sea water, and extreme precipitation, among other climate-

change related intrusions, which has caused injury and harms to its real property and to

improvements thereon, and has prevented free passage on, use of, and normal enjoyment of that

real property, or permanently destroying it.

222. As a direct and proximate result of Defendants' acts and omissions alleged herein,

natural resources held in trust by Rhode Island for the benefit of the people of the State, including

the State's fisheries, shores, groundwater, and terrestrial plant and animal life, have been

threatened and damaged to the public's detriment.

223. But for Defendants' conduct, Rhode Island would have suffered no or far less

injuries and damages than they have endured, and foreseeably will endure, due to increased air and

ocean temperatures, anthropogenic sea level rise, disruption of the hydrologic cycle, and associated

consequences of those physical and environmental changes.

224. Defendants' conduct as described herein is therefore an actual, substantial, and

proximate cause of Rhode Island's climate change-related injuries.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

# VI. CAUSES OF ACTION

### FIRST CAUSE OF ACTION

#### Public Nuisance

# (Against All Defendants)

225. Plaintiff State of Rhode Island realleges each and every allegation contained above, as though set forth herein in full.

226. In Rhode Island, the public is entitled by right to the protection, preservation, and enhancement of the air, water, land, and other natural resources located within the State, and it is the policy of the State to create and maintain within the State conditions under which man and nature can exist in productive harmony in order that present and future generations may enjoy clean air and water, productive land, and other natural resources with which this State has been endowed.

227. Defendants, and each of them, by their affirmative acts and omissions, have created, contributed to, and assisted in creating, conditions in the State of Rhode Island that constitute a nuisance, and has permitted those conditions to persist, by, *inter alia*, increasing local sea level, and associated flooding, inundation, erosion, and other impacts within the State; increasing the frequency and intensity of drought in the State; increasing the frequency and intensity of extreme heat days in the State; and increasing the frequency and intensity of extreme precipitation events in the State.

228. The nuisance created and contributed to by Defendants unreasonably endangers and injures the property, health, peace, comfort, safety, and welfare of the general public and the natural resources of State of Rhode Island, interfering with the comfort and convenience of communities state-wide, as well as with the State's *parens patriae* ability to protect, conserve, and

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

manage the water, land, and wildlife of the State, which are by law precious and invaluable

public resources.

229. Defendants specifically created, contributed to, assisted in creating, and/or were a

substantial contributing factor in the creation of the public nuisance by, inter alia:

a. Controlling every step of the fossil fuel product supply chain, including the

extraction of raw fossil fuel products, including crude oil, coal, and natural

gas from the Earth; the refining and marketing of those fossil fuel products,

and the placement of those fossil fuel products into the stream of commerce;

b. Affirmatively and knowingly promoting the sale and use of fossil fuel

products which Defendants knew to be hazardous and knew would cause or

exacerbate global warming and related consequences, including, but not

limited to, sea level rise, drought, extreme precipitation events, and extreme

heat events;

c. Affirmatively and knowingly concealing the hazards that Defendants knew

would result from the normal use of their fossil fuel products by

misrepresenting and casting doubt on the integrity of scientific information

related to climate change;

d. Disseminating and funding the dissemination of information intended to

mislead customers, consumers, and regulators regarding known and

foreseeable risk of climate change and its consequences, which follow from

the normal, use of Defendants' fossil fuel products;

e. Affirmatively and knowingly campaigning against the regulation of their

fossil fuel products, despite knowing the hazards associated with the normal

Cubarity 3/2/2010 0.57 AM

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

use of those products, in order to continue profiting from use of those products

by externalizing those known costs onto the public, the environment, and

communities; and failing to warn the public about the hazards associated with

the use of fossil fuel products.

230. Because of their superior knowledge of fossil fuel products, and their position

controlling the extraction, refining, development, marketing, and sale of fossil fuel products,

Defendants were in the best position to prevent the nuisance as the harm occurred and continues

to occur, but failed to do so, including by failing to warn customers, retailers, regulators, public

officials, or the State of the risks posed by their fossil fuel products, and failing to take any other

precautionary measures to prevent or mitigate those known harms.

231. The public nuisance caused, contributed to, maintained, and/or participated in by

Defendants has caused and/or imminently threatens to cause substantial injury to the environment

of the State, in which the public has interests represented by and protected by the State in its parens

patriae capacity. The public nuisance has also caused and/or imminently threatens to cause

substantial injury to property directly owned by the State. In particular, higher sea level, more

frequent and extreme droughts, more frequent and extreme precipitation events, more frequent and

extreme heat waves, and the associated consequences of those physical and environmental

changes: (1) are harmful and dangerous to human health; (2) are indecent and offensive to the

senses of the ordinary person; (3) obstruct and threaten to obstruct the free use of public property

within the State so as to interfere with the comfortable enjoyment of life and property; and (4)

obstruct and threaten to obstruct the free passage and use of navigable lakes, rivers, bays, streams,

canals, basins, public parks, squares, streets, and/or highways within the State.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

232. The seriousness of rising sea levels, higher sea level, more frequent and extreme

drought, more frequent and extreme precipitation events, more frequent and extreme heat waves,

and the associated consequences of those physical and environmental changes, is extremely grave

and outweighs the social utility of Defendants' conduct because, inter alia,

a. interference with the public's rights due to sea level rise, more frequent and

extreme drought, more frequent and extreme precipitation events, more

frequent and extreme heat waves, and the associated consequences of those

physical and environmental changes as described above, is expected to

become so regular and severe that it will cause material deprivation of and/or

interference with the use and enjoyment of public and private property in the

State;

b. the ultimate nature of the harm is the destruction of real and personal property,

and loss of natural resources, rather than mere annoyance;

c. the interference borne is the loss of property, infrastructure, and natural

resources within the State, which will actually be borne by the public as loss

of use of public and private property and infrastructure and diversion of tax

dollars away from other public services to the mitigation of and/or adaptation

to climate change impacts;

d. Rhode Island's property, which serves myriad uses including residential,

infrastructural, commercial, and ecological, is not suitable for regular

inundation, flooding, landslides, and/or other physical or environmental

consequences of anthropogenic global warming;

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

e. the social benefit of placing fossil fuels into the stream of commerce is

outweighed by the availability of other sources of energy that could have been

placed into the stream of commerce that would not have caused anthropogenic

climate change and its physical and environmental consequences as described

herein; Defendants, and each of them, knew of the external costs of placing

their fossil fuel products into the stream of commerce, and rather than striving

to mitigate those externalities, Defendants instead acted affirmatively to

obscure them from public consciousness;

f. the cost to society of each ton of greenhouse gases emitted into the

atmosphere increases as total global emissions increase, so that unchecked

extraction and consumption of fossil fuel products is more harmful and costly

than moderated extraction and consumption; and

g. it was practical for Defendants, and each of them, considering their extensive

knowledge of the hazards of placing fossil fuel products into the stream of

commerce and extensive scientific engineering expertise, to develop better

technologies and to pursue and adopt known, practical, and available

technologies, energy sources, and business practices that would have

mitigated greenhouse gas pollution and eased the transition to a lower carbon

economy.

233. As a direct and proximate result of Defendants' conduct, as set forth above, the

common rights enjoyed by the citizens of the State of Rhode Island have been unreasonably

interfered with because Defendants knew or should have known that their conduct would create a

continuing problem with long-lasting significant negative effects on the rights of the public.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

234. Defendants' acts and omissions as alleged herein are an actual and legal cause of

the public nuisance.

235. Defendants' acts and omissions as alleged herein are indivisible causes of Plaintiff

State of Rhode Island's injuries and damage as alleged herein, because, inter alia, it is not possible

to determine the source of any particular individual molecule of CO<sub>2</sub> in the atmosphere attributable

to anthropogenic sources because such greenhouse gas molecules do not bear markers that permit

tracing them to their source, and because greenhouse gasses quickly diffuse and comingle in

the atmosphere.

236. Defendants' wrongful conduct was willful, reckless, or wicked, with conscious

disregard for the probable dangerous consequences of that conduct and its foreseeable impact upon

the rights of others, including the State of Rhode Island. Therefore, the State requests an award of

punitive damages in an amount reasonable, appropriate, and sufficient to punish these Defendants

for the good of society and deter Defendants from ever committing the same or similar acts.

237. Wherefore, the State of Rhode Island prays for relief as set forth below.

SECOND CAUSE OF ACTION

Strict Liability for Failure to Warn

(Against All Defendants)

238. Plaintiff State of Rhode Island realleges each and every allegation contained above,

as though set forth herein in full.

239. Defendants, and each of them, extracted raw fossil fuel products, including crude

oil, coal, and natural gas from the Earth, and placed those fossil fuel products into the stream of

commerce; and at all times had a duty to issue adequate warnings to Plaintiff, the public,

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

consumers, and public officials of the reasonably foreseeable or knowable risks posed by their

fossil fuel products.

240. Defendants, and each of them, extracted, refined, formulated, designed, packaged,

distributed, tested, constructed, fabricated, analyzed, recommended, merchandised, advertised,

promoted, and/or sold fossil fuel products, which were intended by Defendants, and each of them,

to be combusted for energy, refined into petrochemicals, and refined and/or incorporated into

petrochemical products including fuels and plastics.

Defendants, and each of them, heavily marketed, promoted, and advertised fossil 241.

fuel products and their derivatives, which were sold or used by their respective affiliates and

subsidiaries. Defendants received direct financial benefit from their affiliates' and subsidiaries'

sales of fossil fuel products. Defendants' roles as promoters and marketers were integral to their

respective businesses and a necessary factor in bringing fossil fuel products and their derivatives

to the consumer market, such that Defendants had control over, and a substantial ability to

influence, the manufacturing and distribution processes of their affiliates and subsidiaries.

242. Throughout the times at issue, Defendants individually and collectively had actual

and/or constructive knowledge, in light of the scientific knowledge generally accepted at the time,

that fossil fuel products release greenhouse gases into the atmosphere that inevitably cause, inter

alia, global warming, sea level rise, more frequent and extreme droughts, more frequent and

extreme precipitation events, more frequent and extreme heat waves, and the associated

consequences of those physical and environmental changes.

243. Throughout the times at issue and continuing today, fossil fuel products presented

and still present a substantial risk of injury to Plaintiff and its citizens and natural resources through

the climate effects described above.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

> 244. Throughout the times at issue, the ordinary consumer would not recognize that the

use of fossil fuel products causes global and localized changes in climate, including those effects

described herein, and could not ordinarily discover or protect themselves against those dangers in

the absence of adequate warnings.

245. Throughout the times at issue, Defendants individually and in concert widely

disseminated marketing materials, refuted the scientific knowledge generally accepted at the time,

advanced pseudo-scientific theories of their own, and developed public relations campaigns and

materials that prevented reasonable consumers from recognizing the risk that fossil fuel products

would cause grave climate changes, including those described herein.

Defendants, and each of them, breached their duty to warn by failing to adequately 246.

warn customers, consumers, regulators, and the general public of the known and foreseeable risks

posed by their fossil fuel products, and the consequences that inevitably follow from their use.

As a direct and proximate result of the defects previously described, fossil fuel 247.

products, Plaintiff State of Rhode Island has sustained and will sustain other substantial expenses

and damages set forth in this Complaint within the jurisdictional limits of this Court, including

damage to publicly owned infrastructure and real property, and injuries to public trust resources

that interfere with the rights of the State and its citizens.

Defendants' acts and omissions as alleged herein are indivisible causes of Plaintiff 248.

State of Rhode Island's injuries and damage as alleged herein, because, *inter alia*, it is not possible

to determine the source of any particular individual molecule of CO2 in the atmosphere attributable

to anthropogenic sources because such greenhouse gas molecules do not bear markers that permit

tracing them to their source, and because greenhouse gasses quickly diffuse and comingle in

the atmosphere.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

249. Defendants' wrongful conduct was willful, reckless, or wicked, with conscious

disregard for the probable dangerous consequences of that conduct and its foreseeable impact upon

the rights of others, including the State of Rhode Island. Therefore, the State requests an award of

punitive damages in an amount reasonable, appropriate, and sufficient to punish these Defendants

for the good of society and deter Defendants from ever committing the same or similar acts.

250. Wherefore, the State of Rhode Island prays for relief as set forth below.

THIRD CAUSE OF ACTION

Strict Liability for Design Defect

(Against All Defendants)

251. Plaintiff State of Rhode Island realleges each and every allegation contained above,

as though set forth herein in full.

252. Defendants, and each of them, extracted raw fossil fuel products, including crude

oil, coal, and natural gas from the Earth and placed those fossil fuel products into the stream of

commerce; and owed a duty to all persons whom Defendants' fossil fuel products might

foreseeably harm, including Plaintiff, not to market any product which is unreasonably dangerous

for its intended use.

253. Defendants, and each of them, extracted, refined, formulated, designed, packaged,

distributed, tested, constructed, fabricated, analyzed, recommended, merchandised, advertised,

promoted, and/or sold fossil fuel products, which were intended by Defendants, and each of them,

to be burned for energy, refined into petrochemicals, and refined and/or incorporated into

petrochemical products including but not limited to fuels and plastics.

254. Defendants, and each of them, heavily marketed, promoted, and advertised fossil

fuel products and their derivatives, which were sold or used by their respective affiliates and

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

subsidiaries. Defendants' received direct financial benefit from their affiliates' and subsidiaries'

sales of fossil fuel products. Defendants' roles as promoters and marketers were integral to their

respective businesses and a necessary factor in bringing fossil fuel products and their derivatives

to the consumer market, such that Defendants had control over, and a substantial ability to

influence, the manufacturing and distribution processes of their affiliates and subsidiaries.

255. Throughout the time at issue, fossil fuel products have not performed as safely as

an ordinary consumer would expect them to, and have been unreasonably dangerous for their

intended, foreseeable, and ordinary use, because greenhouse gas emissions from their use cause

numerous global and local changes to Earth's climate. In particular, ordinary consumers did not

expect that:

a. fossil fuel products are the primary cause of global warming since the dawn of

the Industrial Revolution, and by far the primary cause of global warming

acceleration in the 20th and 21st centuries;

b. fossil fuel products would cause acceleration of sea level rise since the

beginning of the 20th century;

c. normal use of fossil fuel products would cause more frequent and

extreme drought;

d. normal use of fossil fuel products would cause more frequent and extreme

precipitation events;

e. normal use of fossil fuel products would cause more frequent and extreme heat

waves;

f. normal use of fossil fuel products would cause other injurious changes to the

environment as alleged herein;

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

g. by increasing sea level rise and increasing the severity and intensity of droughts,

extreme precipitation events, heat waves, and the associated consequences of

those physical and environmental changes, fossil fuel products cause damage

to publicly and privately-owned infrastructure and buildings, including homes;

h. the social cost of each ton of CO<sub>2</sub> emitted into the atmosphere increases as total

global emissions increase, so that unchecked extraction and consumption of

fossil fuel products is more harmful and costly than moderated extraction and

consumption; and

i. for these reasons and others, the unmitigated use of fossil fuel products present

significant threats to the environment and human health and welfare.

256. Throughout the times at issue, Defendants individually and in concert widely

disseminated marketing materials, refuted the scientific knowledge generally accepted at the time,

advanced pseudo-scientific theories of their own, and developed public relations materials, among

other public messaging efforts, that prevented reasonable consumers from forming an expectation

that fossil fuel products would cause grave climate changes, including those described herein.

257. The risks posed to consumers and the general public, including and especially to

Rhode Island and its citizens, by Defendants' defective fossil fuel products outweigh those

products' benefits, because, inter alia:

a. the gravity of the potential harms caused by fossil fuel products is extreme;

global warming and its attendant consequences are guaranteed to occur

following the use of fossil fuel products because such use inherently releases

greenhouse gases into the atmosphere; and global warming would continue to

occur for decades even if all greenhouse gas emissions ceased;

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

b. the social benefit of the purpose of placing fossil fuels into the stream of

commerce is overshadowed by the availability of other sources of energy that

could have been placed into the stream of commerce that would not have

caused global warming, its associated consequences including those

described herein, and accordingly Plaintiff's injuries; Defendants, and each

of them, knew of the external costs of placing their fossil fuel products into

the stream of commerce, and rather than striving to mitigate those

externalities, instead acted affirmatively to obscure them from public

consciousness;

c. Defendants' campaign of disinformation regarding global warming and the

climatic effects of fossil fuel products prevented customers, consumers,

regulators, and the general public from taking steps to mitigate the inevitable

consequences of fossil fuel consumption, and incorporating those

consequences into either short-term decisions or long-term planning;

d. the cost to society of each ton of CO<sub>2</sub> emitted into the atmosphere increases

as total global emissions increase so that unchecked extraction and

consumption of fossil fuel products is more harmful and costly than

moderated extraction and consumption; and

e. it was practical for Defendants, and each of them, in light of their extensive

knowledge of the hazards of placing fossil fuel products into the stream of

conunerce, to pursue and adopt known, practical, and available technologies,

energy sources, and business practices that would have mitigated their

greenhouse gas pollution and eased the transition to a lower carbon economy,

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

reduced global CO2 emissions, and mitigated the harms associated with the

use and consumption of such products.

258. The above-described defects were beyond the knowledge of an ordinary consumer,

and neither Plaintiff nor any ordinary consumer could have avoided the harm caused by

Defendants' defective fossil fuel products by the exercise of reasonable care.

259. Defendants' individual and aggregate fossil fuel products reached the consumer in

a condition substantially unchanged from that in which it left Defendants' control; and were used

in the manner in which they were intended to be used by individual and corporate consumers; the

result of which was the addition of CO<sub>2</sub> emissions to the global atmosphere with attendant global

and local consequences.

260. As a direct and proximate result of the defects previously described, fossil fuel

products, Plaintiff State of Rhode Island has sustained and will sustain other substantial expenses

and damages set forth in this Complaint within the jurisdictional limits of this Court, including

damage to publicly owned infrastructure and real property, and injuries to public trust resources

that interfere with the rights of the State and its citizens.

261. Defendants' acts and omissions as alleged herein are indivisible causes of Plaintiff

State of Rhode Island's injuries and damage as alleged herein, because, inter alia, it is not possible

to determine the source of any particular individual molecule of CO<sub>2</sub> in the atmosphere attributable

to anthropogenic sources because such greenhouse gas molecules do not bear markers that permit

tracing them to their source, and because greenhouse gasses quickly diffuse and comingle in

the atmosphere.

262. Defendants' wrongful conduct was willful, reckless, or wicked, with conscious

disregard for the probable dangerous consequences of that conduct and its foreseeable impact upon

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

the rights of others, including the State of Rhode Island. Therefore, the State requests an award of

punitive damages in an amount reasonable, appropriate, and sufficient to punish these Defendants

for the good of society and deter Defendants from ever committing the same or similar acts.

263. Wherefore, the State of Rhode Island prays for relief as set forth below.

# FOURTH CAUSE OF ACTION

## Negligent Design Defect

# (Against All Defendants)

264. Plaintiff State of Rhode Island realleges each and every allegation contained above,

as though set forth herein in full.

265. Defendants knew or should have known of the climate effects inherently caused by

the normal use and operation of their fossil fuel products, including the likelihood and likely

severity of global and local sea level rise and its consequences, and including injuries to Plaintiff,

its citizens, and its natural resources, as described herein.

266. Defendants, collectively and individually, had a duty to use due care in developing,

designing, testing, inspecting, and distributing their fossil fuel products. That duty obligated

Defendants collectively and individually to, inter alia, prevent defective products from entering

the stream of commerce, and prevent reasonably foreseeable harm that could have resulted from

the ordinary use of Defendants' products.

267. Defendants, and each of them, breached their duty of due care by, *inter alia*:

a. allowing fossil fuel products to enter the stream of commerce, despite

knowing them to be defective due to their inevitable propensity to cause sea

level rise, more frequent and extreme drought, more frequent and extreme

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

precipitation events, more frequent and extreme heat waves, and the

associated consequences of those physical and environmental changes;

b. failing to act on the information and warnings they received from their own

internal research staff, as well as from the international scientific community,

that the unabated extraction, promotion, and sale of their fossil fuel products

would result in material dangers to the public, including the State of Rhode

Island and its citizens and natural resources;

c. failing to take actions including, but not limited to, pursuing and adopting

known, practical, and available technologies, energy sources, and business

practices that would have mitigated greenhouse gas pollution caused by

Defendants' fossil fuel products and eased the transition to a lower carbon

economy; shifting to non-fossil fuel products, and researching and/or offering

technologies to mitigate CO<sub>2</sub> emissions in conjunction with sale and

distribution of their fossil fuel products; and pursuing other available

alternatives that would have prevented or mitigated the injuries to Plaintiff,

its citizens, and its natural resources caused by sea level rise, more frequent

and extreme drought, more frequent and extreme precipitation events, more

frequent and extreme heat waves, and the associated consequences of those

physical and environmental changes, that Defendants, and each of them, knew

or should have foreseen would inevitably result from use of Defendants' fossil

fuel products;

d. engaging in a campaign of disinformation regarding global warming and the

climatic effects of fossil fuel products that prevented customers, consumers,

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

regulators, and the general public from staking steps to mitigate the inevitable

consequences of fossil fuel consumption, and incorporating those

consequences into either short-term decisions or long-term planning.

268. Defendants' individual and collective acts and omissions were actual, substantial

causes of sea level rise, more frequent and extreme drought, more frequent and extreme

precipitation events, more frequent and extreme heat waves, and the associated consequences of

those physical and environmental changes, including injuries and damages set forth herein to

Plaintiff, its citizens, and its natural resources, as sea levels would not have risen to the levels that

caused those injuries, and prevailing climatic and meteorological regimes would not have been

disrupted to a magnitude that caused those in juries, but for Defendants' introduction of their fossil

fuel products into the stream of commerce.

269. As a direct and proximate result of Defendants' and each of their acts and

omissions, Plaintiff State of Rhode Island has sustained and will sustain other substantial expenses

and damages set forth in this Complaint within the jurisdictional limits of this Court, including

damage to publicly owned infrastructure and real property, and injuries to public trust resources

that interfere with the rights of the State and its citizens.

270. Defendants' acts and omissions as alleged herein are indivisible causes of Plaintiff

State of Rhode Island's injuries and damage as alleged herein, because, inter alia, it is not possible

to determine the source of any particular individual molecule of CO<sub>2</sub> in the atmosphere attributable

to anthropogenic sources because such greenhouse gas molecules do not bear markers that permit

tracing them to their source, and because greenhouse gasses quickly diffuse and comingle in

the atmosphere.

busing 7/0/0040 0 57 AM

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

271. Defendants' wrongful conduct was willful, reckless, or wicked, with conscious

disregard for the probable dangerous consequences of that conduct and its foreseeable impact upon

the rights of others, including the State of Rhode Island. Therefore, the State requests an award of

punitive damages in an amount reasonable, appropriate, and sufficient to punish these Defendants

for the good of society and deter Defendants from ever committing the same or similar acts.

272. Wherefore, the State of Rhode Island prays for relief as set forth below.

### FIFTH CAUSE OF ACTION

## Negligent Failure to Warn

## (Against All Defendants)

273. Plaintiff State of Rhode Island realleges each and every allegation contained above,

as though set forth herein in full.

274. Defendants, and each of them, at all times had a duty to issue adequate warnings to

Plaintiff, the public, consumers, and public officials of the reasonably foreseeable or knowable

risks posed by their fossil fuel products.

275. Defendants knew or should have known, based on information passed to them from

their internal research divisions and affiliates and/or from the international scientific community,

of the climate effects inherently caused by the normal use and operation of their fossil fuel

products, including the likelihood and likely severity of global warming, global and local sea level

rise, more frequent and extreme drought, more frequent and extreme precipitation events, more

frequent and extreme heat waves, and the associated consequences of those physical and

environmental changes, including Plaintiff's injuries and damages described herein.

276. Defendants knew or should have known, based on information passed to them from

their internal research divisions and affiliates and/or from the international scientific community,

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

that the climate effects described herein rendered their fossil fuel products dangerous, or likely to

be dangerous, when used as intended.

277. Throughout the times at issue, Defendants breached their duty of care by failing to

adequately warn any consumers or any other party of the climate effects that inevitably flow from

the intended use of their fossil fuel products.

278. Throughout the times at issue, Defendants individually and in concert widely

disseminated marketing materials, refuted the scientific knowledge generally accepted at the time,

advanced pseudo-scientific theories of their own, and developed public relations materials that

prevented reasonable consumers from recognizing the risk that fossil fuel products would cause

grave climate changes, undermining and rendering ineffective any warnings that Defendants may

have also disseminated.

279. Given the grave dangers presented by the climate effects that inevitably flow from

the normal use of fossil fuel products, a reasonable extractor, manufacturer, formulator, seller, or

other participant responsible for introducing fossil fuel products into the stream of commerce,

would have warned of those known, inevitable climate effects.

280. Defendants' conduct was a direct and proximate cause of Plaintiff's injuries and a

substantial factor in the harms suffered by Plaintiff as alleged herein.

281. As a direct and proximate result of Defendants' and each of their acts and

omissions, Plaintiff State of Rhode Island has sustained and will sustain other substantial expenses

and damages set forth in this Complaint within the jurisdictional limits of this Court, including

damage to publicly owned infrastructure and real property, and injuries to public trust resources

that interfere with the rights of the State and its citizens.

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605

Reviewer: Alexa G.

282. Defendants' acts and omissions as alleged herein are indivisible causes of Plaintiff

State of Rhode Island's injuries and damage as alleged herein, because, inter alia, it is not possible

to determine the source of any particular individual molecule of CO2 in the atmosphere attributable

to anthropogenic sources because such greenhouse gas molecules do not bear markers that permit

tracing them to their source, and because greenhouse gasses quickly diffuse and comingle in

the atmosphere.

283. Defendants' wrongful conduct was willful, reckless, or wicked, with conscious

disregard for the probable dangerous consequences of that conduct and its foreseeable impact upon

the rights of others, including the State of Rhode Island. Therefore, the State requests an award of

punitive damages in an amount reasonable, appropriate, and sufficient to punish these Defendants

for the good of society and deter Defendants from ever committing the same or similar acts.

284. Wherefore, the State of Rhode Island prays for relief as set forth below.

#### SIXTH CAUSE OF ACTION

#### Trespass

#### (Against All Defendants)

285. Plaintiff State of Rhode Island realleges each and every allegation contained above,

as though set forth herein in full.

286. Plaintiff owns, leases, occupies, and/or controls real property throughout the State.

287. Defendants, and each of them, have intentionally, recklessly, or negligently caused

flood waters, extreme precipitation, landslides, saltwater, and other materials, to enter Plaintiff's

property, by extracting, refining, formulating, designing, packaging, distributing, testing,

constructing, fabricating, analyzing, recommending, merchandising, advertising, promoting,

marketing, and/or selling fossil fuel products, knowing those products in their normal operation

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

and use would cause global and local sea levels to rise, more frequent and extreme droughts to

occur, more frequent and extreme precipitation events to occur, more frequent and extreme heat

waves to occur, and the associated consequences of those physical and environmental changes.

288. The State of Rhode Island did not give permission for Defendants, or any of them,

to cause floodwaters, extreme precipitation, landslides, saltwater, and other materials to enter its

property as a result of the use of Defendants' fossil fuel products.

289. The State of Rhode Island has been and continues to be actually injured and

continues to suffer damages within the jurisdictional limits of this Court as a result of Defendants

and each of their having caused flood waters, extreme precipitation, landslides, saltwater, and other

materials, to enter its real property, by inter alia submerging real property owned by Rhode Island

and causing flooding which has invaded and threatens to invade real property owned by Rhode

Island and rendered it unusable, causing storm surges and heightened waves which have invaded

and threatened to invade real property owned by Rhode Island, and causing landslides to enter the

State's property, and in so doing, rendering the property unusable.

290. Defendants' and each Defendant's introduction of their fossil fuel products into the

stream of conunerce was a substantial factor in causing the injuries and harms to Rhode Island's

public and private real property as alleged herein.

291. Defendants' acts and omissions as alleged herein are indivisible causes of Plaintiff

State of Rhode Island's injuries and damage as alleged herein, because, *inter alia*, it is not possible

to determine the source of any particular individual molecule of CO<sub>2</sub> in the atmosphere attributable

to anthropogenic sources because such greenhouse gas molecules do not bear markers that permit

tracing them to their source, and because greenhouse gasses quickly diffuse and comingle in

the atmosphere.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

> Defendants' wrongful conduct was willful, reckless, or wicked, with conscious 292.

disregard for the probable dangerous consequences of that conduct and its foreseeable impact upon

the rights of others, including the State of Rhode Island. Therefore, the State requests an award of

punitive damages in an amount reasonable, appropriate, and sufficient to punish these Defendants

for the good of society and deter Defendants from ever committing the same or similar acts.

293. Wherefore, the State of Rhode Island prays for relief as set forth below.

## SEVENTH CAUSE OF ACTION

#### Impairment of Public Trust Resources

### (Against All Defendants)

294. Plaintiff State of Rhode Island realleges each and every allegation contained above,

as though set forth herein in full.

295. The Rhode Island Constitution has enshrined common law to provide for broad

protection of the State's natural resources, and guarantees that its citizens "shall continue to enjoy

and freely exercise all the rights of fishery, and the privileges of the shore, to which they have been

heretofore entitled under the charter and usages of this state, including but not limited to fishing

from the shore, the gathering of seaweed, leaving the shore to swim in the sea and passage along

the shore; and they shall be secure in their rights to the use and enjoyment of the natural resources

of the state with due regard for the preservation of their values." R.I. Const. art. I, § 17.

296. The Rhode Island Constitution provides that the "powers of the state" to "regulate

and control the use of land and waters in the furtherance of the preservation, regeneration, and

restoration of the natural environment . . . as those rights and duties are set forth in Section 17,

shall be an exercise of the police powers of the state, [and] shall be liberally construed." R.I. Const.

art. I, § 16.

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

> 297. The General Assembly has repeatedly declared that coastal resources of the State,

plant and animal life within the State, and the State's watershed are critical natural resources

inuring to the benefit of the public. The General Assembly has thus found and declared that "the

coastal resources of Rhode Island, a rich variety of natural, commercial, industrial, recreational,

and aesthetic assets, are of immediate and potential value to the present and future development of

this state," and that "it shall be the policy of this state to preserve, protect, develop, and, where

possible, restore the coastal resources of the state for this and succeeding generations." R.I. Gen.

Laws §§ 46-6.1-2(5); 46-23-1(a)(2).

The General Assembly has further found and declared that "Narragansett Bay may

be the greatest natural resource of the state of Rhode Island," and that failure to protect the

environmental integrity of the Narragansett Bay will create "severe and detrimental ecological and

economic impact upon the people of the state of Rhode Island." R.J. Gen. Laws § 46-5-2(a)(2).

299. The General Assembly has further found and declared that "the bays, rivers, and

associated watersheds of Rhode Island are unique and unparalleled natural resources that provide

significant cultural, ecological, and economic benefit to the state," and that "it is in the best interest

of the state and its citizens to preserve, protect, and restore our bays, rivers, and associated

watersheds." R.I. Gen. Laws § 46-31-.1-1(1),(3).

The General Assembly has further found and declared that "animal life inhabiting 300.

the lands of the state, its lakes, ponds, streams, and rivers, and the marine waters within its

territorial jurisdiction, are a precious, renewable, natural resource of the state." R.I. Gen. Laws

§ 20-1-1(a).

301. As alleged above, Defendants, through their affirmative acts and omissions have

interfered with the use and enjoyment of public trust resources within Rhode Island including the

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605

Reviewer: Alexa G.

fisheries, shores, and other coastal resources of the State; plant and animal life within the State;

and the State's watershed by, inter alia, increasing local sea level, and associated flooding,

inundation, erosion, and other impacts within the State; increasing the frequency and intensity of

drought in the State; altering and harming the diversity of wildlife in the State's coastal waters and

fisheries; harning salt marsh ecosystems within the State; increasing the frequency and intensity

of extreme heat days in the State; and increasing the frequency and intensity of extreme

precipitation events in the State.

302. As a direct and proximate result of the defects previously described, fossil fuel

products, the public trust resources over which the State serves as trustee have been injured, and

the use and enjoyment of those resources by Rhode Island and its citizens has been impaired. As

a result, the State of Rhode Island has incurred and will continue to incur substantial expenses and

damages set forth in this Complaint within the jurisdictional limits of this Court to investigate,

remediate, prevent, and restore injuries to public trust resources, for which Defendants are jointly

and severally liable.

303. Defendants' acts and omissions as alleged herein are indivisible causes of Plaintiff

State of Rhode Island's injuries and damage as alleged herein, because, *inter alia*, it is not possible

to determine the source of any particular individual molecule of CO<sub>2</sub> in the atmosphere attributable

to anthropogenic sources because such greenhouse gas molecules do not bear markers that permit

tracing them to their source, and because greenhouse gasses quickly diffuse and comingle in

the atmosphere.

Defendants' wrongful conduct was willful, reckless, or wicked, with conscious 304.

disregard for the probable dangerous consequences of that conduct and its foreseeable impact upon

the rights of others, including the State of Rhode Island. Therefore, the State requests an award of

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

punitive damages in an amount reasonable, appropriate, and sufficient to punish these Defendants

for the good of society and deter Defendants from ever committing the same or similar acts.

305. Wherefore, the State of Rhode Island prays for relief as set forth below.

EIGHTH CAUSE OF ACTION

State Environmental Rights Act, Equitable Relief Action

(Against All Defendants)

306. Plaintiff State of Rhode Island realleges each and every allegation contained above,

as though set forth herein in full.

307. The General Assembly has further found and declared that "cach person is entitled

by right to the protection, preservation, and enhancement of air, water, land, and other natural

resources located within the state," and that "it is in the public interest to provide an adequate civil

remedy to protect air, water, land and other natural resources located within the state from

pollution, impairment, or destruction." R.I. Gen. Laws § 10-20-1.

308. The General Assembly has defined "pollution, impairment, or destruction" to

include "any conduct which materially adversely affects or is likely to materially adversely affect

the environment." R.I. Gen. Laws § 10-20-2(6).

309. The Attorney General "may maintain an action in any court of competent

jurisdiction for declaratory and equitable relief against any other person for the protection of the

environment, or the interest of the public therein, from pollution, impairment, or destruction," and

may "take all possible action, including . . . formal legal action, to secure and insure compliance

with the provisions of this chapter." R.I. Gen. Laws § 10-20-3(b), (d)(1), (d)(5).

310. In such an action maintained by the Attorney General, "It he court may grant

declaratory relief, temporary and permanent equitable relief, or may impose such conditions upon

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

a party as are necessary or appropriate to protect the air, water, land, or other natural resources

located within the state from pollution, impairment, or destruction, considering the health, safety,

and welfare of the public, and the availability of feasible, prudent, and economically viable

alternatives." R.I. Gen. Laws § 10-20-6.

As alleged above, Defendants, through their affirmative acts and omissions have 311.

polluted, impaired, and/or destroyed natural resources of the state by, inter alia, increasing local

sea level, and associated flooding, inundation, erosion, and other impacts within the State;

increasing the frequency and intensity of drought in the State; increasing the frequency and

intensity of extreme heat days in the State; and increasing the frequency and intensity of extreme

precipitation events in the State.

As a direct and proximate result of Defendants' fossil fuel products, Defendants

have polluted, impaired, and/or destroyed natural resources of the state. Rhode Island has incurred

and will continue to incur substantial expenses and damages set forth in this Complaint within the

jurisdictional limits of this Court to investigate, remediate, prevent, and restore injuries to public

trust resources, for which Defendants are jointly and severally liable.

Defendants' acts and omissions as alleged herein are indivisible causes of Plaintiff 313.

State of Rhode Island's injuries and damage as alleged herein, because, inter alia, it is not possible

to determine the source of any particular individual molecule of CO<sub>2</sub> in the atmosphere attributable

to anthropogenic sources because such greenhouse gas molecules do not bear markers that permit

tracing them to their source, and because greenhouse gasses quickly diffuse and comingle in

the atmosphere.

Defendants' wrongful conduct was willful, reckless, or wicked, with conscious 314.

disregard for the probable dangerous consequences of that conduct and its foreseeable impact upon

Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

the rights of others, including the State of Rhode Island. Therefore, the State requests an award of punitive damages in an amount reasonable, appropriate, and sufficient to punish these Defendants for the good of society and deter Defendants from ever committing the same or similar acts.

315. Wherefore, the State of Rhode Island prays for relief as set forth below.

### VII. PRAYER FOR RELIEF

The Plaintiff, **STATE OF RHODE ISLAND**, seeks judgment against these Defendants for:

- 1. Compensatory damages in an amount according to proof;
- 2. Equitable relief, including abatement of the nuisances complained of herein;
- 3. Reasonable attorneys' fees as permitted by law;
- 4. Punitive damages;
- 5. Disgorgement of profits;
- 6. Costs of suit; and
- 7. For such and other relief as the court may deem proper.

Case Number: PC-2018-4716 Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

### REQUEST FOR JURY TRIAL

Plaintiff hereby demands a jury trial on all causes of action for which a jury is available under the law.

Case Number: PC-2018-4716
Filed in Providence/Bristol County Superior Court

Submitted: 7/2/2018 9:57 AM

Envelope: 1610605 Reviewer: Alexa G.

Dated: July 2, 2018

### STATE OF RHODE ISLAND

By Its Attorneys,

Peter F. Kilmartin

Attorney General (Bar No. 6023)

Rebecca Partington

Assistant Attorney General and Chief of the Civil Division (Bar No. 3890)

Neil F.X. Kelly

Assistant Attorney General and Deputy Chief of the Civil Division (Bar No. 4515)

### DEPARTMENT OF THE ATTORNEY GENERAL

150 South Main Street Providence, RI 02903 Tel. (401) 274-4400 pkilmartin@riag.ri.gov rpartington@riag.ri.gov nkelly@riag.ri.gov

Victor M. Sher, pro hac vice pending Matthew K. Edling, pro hac vice pending Timothy R. Sloane, pro hac vice pending Martin D. Quiñones, pro hac vice pending Meredith S. Wilensky, pro hac vice pending Katie H. Jones, pro hac vice pending

#### SHER EDLING LLP

100 Montgomery Street, Suite 1410
San Francisco, CA 94104
Tel: (628) 231-2500
vic@sheredling.com
matt@sheredling.com
tim@sheredling.com
marty@sheredling.com
meredith@sheredling.com
katie@sheredling.com

# Attachment B

### STATE OF RHODE ISLAND PROVIDENCE COUNTY

#### **SUPERIOR COURT**

STATE OF RHODE ISLAND, : Plaintiff, :

V.

: No. PC-2018-4716

CHEVRON CORP.;
CHEVRON U.S.A. INC.;
EXXONMOBIL CORP.;
BP P.L.C.;
BP AMERICA, INC.;

BP PRODUCTS NORTH AMERICA,

INC.;

ROYAL DUTCH SHELL PLC; MOTIVA ENTERPRISES, LLC; SHELL OIL PRODUCTS COMPANY

CITGO PETROLEUM CORP.;

CONOCOPHILLIPS:

CONOCOPHILLIPS COMPANY;

PHILLIPS 66;

MARATHON OIL COMPANY;

MARATHON OIL COMPANT,
MARATHON OIL CORPORATION;
MARATHON PETROLEUM CORP.;
MARATHON PETROLEUM COMPANY
LP;

SPEEDWAY LLC;

HESS CORP.;

LUKOIL PAN AMERICAS, LLC; : GETTY PETROLEUM MARKETING, :

INC.; AND

DOES 1 through 100, inclusive

Defendants.

NOTICE OF FILING OF NOTICE OF REMOVAL OF ACTION TO FEDERAL COURT PLEASE TAKE NOTICE that Defendant Shell Oil Products Company LLC has on this day filed a Notice of Removal in the United States District Court for the District of Rhode Island pursuant to 28 U.S.C. §§ 1446 et seq. A copy of the Notice of Removal is attached hereto as Exhibit A.

SHELL OIL PRODUCTS COMPANY LLC By its attorney,

/s/ Douglas J. Emanuel
Robert D. Fine (2447)
Douglas J. Emanuel (5176)
Chace Ruttenberg & Freedman, LLP
One Park Row, Suite 300
Providence, RI 02903
Tel.: (401) 453-6400

Email: demanuel@crfllp.com

Dated: July 13, 2018

### **CERTIFICATE OF SERVICE**

I hereby certify that on the 13th day of July, 2018, I filed and served this document through the electronic filing system on all parties registered therein to receive notice in this case. The document electronically filed and served is available for viewing and/or downloading from the Rhode Island Judiciary's Electronic Filing System. I hereby certify that I additionally mailed a copy of the within Notice of Filing Notice of Removal to the following:

PETER F. KILMARTIN
REBECCA PARTINGTON
NEIL F.X. KELLY **DEPARTMENT OF THE ATTORNEY GENERAL**150 South Main Street
Providence, RI 02903

VICTOR M. SHER
MATTHEW K. EDLING
TIMOTHY R. SLOANE
MARTIN D. QUIÑONES
MEREDITH S. WILENSKY
KATIE H. JONES
SHER EDLING LLP
100 Montgomery Street, Suite 1410
San Francisco, CA 94104

/s/ Douglas J. Emanuel

### UNITED STATES DISTRICT COURT FOR THE DISTRICT OF RHODE ISLAND

STATE OF RHODE ISLAND, Plaintiff,	
v.	C.A. No.
CHEVRON CORP.; CHEVRON USA, INC.; EXXONMOBIL CORP.' BP, PLC; BP AMERICA, INC.; BP PRODUCTS NORTH AMERICA, INC.; ROYAL DUTCH SHELL, PLC; MOTIVA ENTERPRISES, LLC; SHELL OIL PRODUCTS COMPANY, LLC; CITGO PETROLEUM CORP.; CONOCOPHILLIPS; CONOCOPHILLIPS COMPANY; PHILLIPS 66; MARATHON OIL COMPANY; MARATHON OIL CORPORATION; MARATHON PETROLEUM CORP.; MARATHON PETROLEUM COMPANY, LP; SPEEDWAY, LLC; HESS CORP.; LUKOIL PAN AMERICAS, LLC; GETTY PETROLEUM MARKETING, INC.; AND DOES 1 through 100, inclusive	NOTICE OF REMOVAL BY DEFENDANT SHELL OIL PRODUCTS COMPANY LLC  [Removal from the Providence Superior Court of Rhode Island, C.A. No. PC2018-4716]  Action Filed: July 2, 2018
Defendants.	

# TO THE CLERK OF THE ABOVE-TITLED COURT AND TO PLAINTIFF THE STATE OF RHODE ISLAND AND ITS COUNSEL OF RECORD:

PLEASE TAKE NOTICE THAT Defendant Shell Oil Products Company LLC ("SOPC") removes this action—with reservation of all defenses and rights—from the Providence County Superior Court of the State of Rhode Island, Case No. PC-2018-4716, to the United States District Court for the District of Rhode Island pursuant to 28 U.S.C. §§ 1331, 1334, 1441(a), 1442, 1452 and 1367(a), and 43 U.S.C. § 1349(b).

This Court has original federal question jurisdiction under 28 U.S.C. § 1331, because the Complaint arises under federal laws and treaties, and presents substantial federal questions as well as claims that are completely preempted by federal law. This Court has supplemental jurisdiction under 28 U.S.C. § 1367(a) over any claims over which it does not have original federal question jurisdiction because they form part of the same case or controversy as those claims over which the Court has original jurisdiction. As set forth below, removal is proper pursuant to 28 U.S.C. §§ 1441, 1442, 1446, and 1452, and 43 U.S.C. § 1349(b).

Through its Complaint, the State of Rhode Island calls into question longstanding decisions by the Federal Government regarding, among other things, national security, national energy policy, environmental protection, development of outer continental shelf lands, the maintenance of a national petroleum reserve, mineral extraction on federal lands (which has produced billions of dollars for the Federal Government), and the negotiation of international agreements bearing on the development and use of fossil fuels. Many of the Defendants have contracts with the Federal Government to develop and extract minerals from federal lands and to sell fuel and associated products to the Federal Government for the Nation's defense. The gravamen of the Complaint seeks either to undo all of those Federal Government policies or to extract "compensation" and force Defendants to relinquish the profits they obtained by having contracted with the Federal Government or relied upon national policies to develop fossil fuel resources.

In the Complaint's view, a state court, on petition by a state, may regulate the nationwide—and indeed, worldwide—economic activity of key sectors of the American economy, those that supply the fuels that power production and innovation, keep the lights on, and that form the basic materials from which innumerable consumer, technological, and medical

devices are themselves fashioned. Though nominally asserted under state law, the Complaint puts at issue long-established federal statutory, regulatory, and constitutional issues and frameworks, and it seeks to hold a small number of oil and gas companies—who themselves are responsible for a mere fraction of global greenhouse gas emissions—liable for the alleged effects of *global* warming, including sea level rise and extreme precipitation caused by greenhouse gas emissions from countless nonparties.

This case is about *global* emissions. Plaintiff alleges that the worldwide use of fossil fuels "plays a direct and substantial role in the unprecedented rise in emissions of greenhouse gas pollution," which "is the main driver of the gravely dangerous changes occurring to the global climate." Compl. ¶¶ 2. Importantly, however, Plaintiff's claims are not limited to harms caused by fossil fuels extracted, sold, marketed, or used in Rhode Island. Instead, its claims depend on Defendants' nationwide and global activities, as well as the activities of billions of fossil fuel consumers, including not only entities such as the U.S. government and military, but also hospitals, schools, manufacturing facilities, and individual households.

This lawsuit implicates bedrock federal-state divisions of responsibility, and appropriates to itself the direction of such federal spheres as nationwide economic development, international relations, and America's national security. Reflecting the substantial and uniquely federal interests posed by greenhouse gas claims like these, the Supreme Court has recognized that causes of action of the types asserted here are governed by federal common law, *not* state law.

Accordingly, Plaintiff's Complaint should be heard in this federal forum.

### I. TIMELINESS OF REMOVAL

- 1. Plaintiff, the State of Rhode Island, filed a complaint against SOPC and other named Defendants in the Providence County Superior Court, Rhode Island, Case No. PC-2018-4716, on July 2, 2018. A copy of all process, pleadings, or orders in the possession of Shell is attached as Exhibit A to the Declaration of Douglas J. Emanuel, filed concurrently herewith.
- 2. This notice of removal is timely under 28 U.S.C. § 1446(b) because it is filed fewer than 30 days after service. 28 U.S.C. § 1446(b). SOPC has not yet been served as of this date. *See* Emanuel Decl. ¶ 2. Consent to this removal petition is not required because removal does not proceed "solely under 28 U.S.C. § 1441." 28 U.S.C. § 1446(b)(2)(A); *see also, e.g.*, 28 U.S.C. § 1452. Nevertheless, SOPC has obtained the consent of all other defendants that have been served as of the filing of this notice of removal. Emanuel Decl. ¶ 4. Consent is not required from any defendant that has not been served. 28 U.S.C. § 1446(b)(2)(A); *Gorman v. Abbot Labs.*, 629 F. Supp. 1196, 1200 (D.R.I. 1986) ("defendants who have not yet been served with process at the time of the petition for removal are not required to conjoin.").<sup>2</sup>

#### II. SUMMARY OF ALLEGATIONS AND GROUNDS FOR REMOVAL

3. Plaintiff is the State of Rhode Island. Plaintiff brings claims against Defendants for alleged injuries relating to climate change, including damages and injunctive relief from injuries suffered from "global warming," including, sea level rise, storms, heatwaves, drought,

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> Pursuant to 28 U.S.C. § 1446(a) and District of Rhode Island Local Rule 81, Shell will take all actions necessary to enable the Clerk of the Providence County Superior Court to assemble the certified record and transmit it to this Court.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> In filing this Notice of Removal, Shell and the consenting Defendants do not waive, and expressly preserve any right, defense, affirmative defense, or objection, including, without limitation, personal jurisdiction, insufficient process, and/or insufficient service of process. *See, e.g., Carter v. Bldg. Material & Const. Teamsters' Union Local* 216, 928 F. Supp. 997, 1000–01 (N.D. Cal. 1996) ("A petition for removal affects only the forum in which the action will be heard; it does not affect personal jurisdiction.") (citing *Morris & Co. v. Skandinavia Ins. Co.*, 279 U.S. 405, 409 (1929)).

and other natural phenomena. *See, e.g.*, Compl. ¶¶ 3, 8. Plaintiff asserts the following claims: public nuisance; private nuisance; strict liability for failure to warn; strict liability for design defect; negligent design defect; negligent failure to warn; trespass; impairment of public trust resources; and State Environmental Rights Act, an equitable relief action. In addition to compensatory and punitive damages, Plaintiff seeks the "disgorgement of profits," as well as "equitable relief, including abatement of the nuisances complained of" in the Complaint (Compl., Prayer for Relief).

- 4. SOPC will deny that any Rhode Island court has personal jurisdiction and will deny any liability as to Plaintiff's claims. SOPC expressly reserves all rights in this regard. For purposes of meeting the jurisdictional requirements for removal only, however, SOPC submits that removal is proper on at least seven independent and alternative grounds.
- 5. *First*, the action is removable under 28 U.S.C. § 1441(a) and 28 U.S.C. § 1331 because Plaintiff's claims, to the extent that such claims exist, implicate uniquely federal interests and are governed by federal common law, and not state common law. *See Nat'l Farmers Union Ins. Cos. v. Crow Tribe of Indians*, 471 U.S. 847, 850 (1985). Federal common law applies only in those few areas of the law that so implicate "uniquely federal interests" that application of state law is affirmatively inappropriate. *See, e.g., Boyle v. United Techs. Corp.*, 487 U.S. 500, 504, 507 (1988); *Am. Elec. Power Co., Inc. v. Connecticut*, 564 U.S. 410, 424 (2011) ("*AEP*") ("borrowing the law of a particular State would be inappropriate"). Plaintiff's claims, to the extent they exist at all, arise under federal common law, not state law, and are properly removed to this Court.
- 6. **Second**, removal is authorized under 28 U.S.C. § 1441(a) and 28 U.S.C. § 1331 because the action necessarily raises disputed and substantial federal questions that a federal

forum may entertain without disturbing a congressionally approved balance of responsibilities between the federal and state judiciaries. *See Grable & Sons Metal Prods., Inc. v. Darue Eng'g & Mfg.*, 545 U.S. 308 (2005). In fact, the causes of action as alleged in the Complaint attack federal policy decisions and threaten to upset longstanding federal-state relations, second-guess policy decisions made by Congress and the Executive Branch, and skew divisions of responsibility set forth in federal statutes and the United States Constitution.

- 7. Third, removal is authorized under 28 U.S.C. § 1441(a) and 28 U.S.C. § 1331 because Plaintiff's claims are completely preempted by the Clean Air Act and/or other federal statutes and the United States Constitution, which provide an exclusive federal remedy for plaintiffs seeking stricter regulations regarding the nationwide and worldwide greenhouse gas emissions put at issue in the Complaint.
- 8. *Fourth*, this Court has original jurisdiction over this lawsuit and removal is proper pursuant to the Outer Continental Shelf Lands Act ("OCSLA"), because this action "aris[es] out of, or in connection with (A) any operation conducted on the outer Continental Shelf which involves exploration, development, or production of the minerals, or the subsoil or seabed of the outer Continental Shelf, or which involves rights to such minerals." 43 U.S.C. § 1349(b); *see also Tenn. Gas Pipeline v. Houston Cas. Ins. Co.*, 87 F.3d 150, 155 (5th Cir. 1996).
- 9. *Fifth*, Defendants are authorized to remove this action under 28 U.S.C. § 1442(a)(1) because, assuming the truth of Plaintiff's allegations, a causal nexus exists between their actions, taken pursuant to a federal officer's directions, and Plaintiff's claims, and Defendants can assert several colorable federal defenses. *Shepherd v. Air & Liquid Sys. Corp.*,

2012 WL 5874781, at \*2 (D.R.I. Nov. 20, 2012); see also Leite v. Crane Co., 749 F.3d 1117 (9th Cir. 2014).

- 10. *Sixth*, removal is authorized under 28 U.S.C. § 1441(a) and 28 U.S.C. § 1331 because Plaintiff's claims are based on alleged injuries to and/or conduct on federal enclaves. As such, Plaintiff's claims arise under federal-question jurisdiction and are removable to this Court. *See* U.S. Const., art. I, § 8, cl. 17. "Federal courts have federal question jurisdiction over tort claims that arise on 'federal enclaves.'" *Serrano v. Consol. Waste Servs. Corp.*, 2017 WL 1097061, at \*1 (D.P.R. Mar. 23, 2017) (quoting *Durham v. Lockheed Martin Corp.*, 445 F.3d 1247, 1250 (9th Cir. 2006)).
- U.S.C. § 1334(b) because Plaintiff's state-law claims are related to cases under Title 11 of the United States Code. Plaintiff alleges that Defendants (improperly defined by Plaintiff to include the conduct of Defendants' subsidiaries, *see*, *e.g.*, Compl ¶¶ 21(b)–(f), 22(b)–(e), 23(a)–(f), 156, 183, 190(a), 241, 254) engaged in conduct constituting a public nuisance over many decades. Because Plaintiff's claim is predicated on historical activities of Defendants, including predecessor companies and companies that they may have acquired or with which they may have merged, and because there are hundreds, if not thousands, of non-joined necessary and indispensable parties, there are many other Title 11 cases that may be related. *See In re Boston Regional Medical Center, Inc.*, 410 F.3d 100, 105 (1st Cir. 2005)
- 12. For the convenience of the Court and all parties, Defendants will address each of these grounds in additional detail. Should Plaintiff challenge this Court's jurisdiction, Defendants will further elaborate on these grounds and will not be limited to the specific articulations in this Notice.

# III. THIS COURT HAS FEDERAL-QUESTION JURISDICTION BECAUSE PLAINTIFF'S CLAIMS ARISE, IF AT ALL, UNDER FEDERAL COMMON LAW

- 13. This action is removable because Plaintiff's claims, to the extent that such claims exist, necessarily are governed by federal common law, and not state common law. 28 U.S.C. § 1331 grants federal courts original jurisdiction over "claims founded upon federal common law as well as those of a statutory origin." *Nat'l Farmers Union*, 471 U.S. at 850 (quoting *Illinois v. City of Milwaukee*, 406 U.S. 91, 100 (1972) ("*Milwaukee F*")). As the First Circuit has explained, the federal common law of nuisance "was originally recognized to fill a void in the law applicable to suits seeking abatement of pollution originating within the domain of one state sovereign and exerting adverse effects in the domain of another." *Massachusetts v. U.S. Veterans Admin.*, 541 F.2d 119, 123 (1st Cir. 1976). As Plaintiff's claims arise under federal common law, this Court has federal-question jurisdiction and removal is proper.
- 14. Though "[t]here is no federal *general* common law," *Erie R. Co. v. Tompkins*, 304 U.S. 64, 78 (1938) (emphasis added), federal common law continues to exist, and to govern, in a few subject areas in which there are "uniquely federal interests," *Boyle*, 487 U.S. at 504. *See generally* Henry J. Friendly, *In Praise of* Erie—*and the New Federal Common Law*, 39 N.Y.U. L. Rev. 383 (1964). Such uniquely federal interests will require the application of federal common law where, for example, the issue is one that by its nature, is "within national legislative power" and there is "a demonstrated need for a federal rule of decision" with respect to that issue. *AEP*, 564 U.S. at 421 (citation omitted). Federal common law therefore applies, in the post-*Erie* era, in those discrete areas in which application of state law would be inappropriate and would contravene federal interests. *Boyle*, 487 U.S. at 504–07. The decision that federal common law applies to a particular issue thus inherently reflects a determination that state law

does *not* apply. *See City of Milwaukee v. Illinois & Michigan*, 451 U.S. 304, 312 n.7 (1981) ("*Milwaukee II*") ("[I]f federal common law exists, it is because state law cannot be used."); *Nat'l Audubon Soc'y v. Dep't of Water*, 869 F.2d 1196, 1204 (9th Cir. 1988).

Courts have applied federal common law to global warming-based tort claims 15. because it applies to "subjects within the national legislative power where Congress has so directed or where the basic scheme of the Constitution so demands." Native Vill. of Kivalina v. ExxonMobil Corp., 696 F.3d 849, 855 (9th Cir. 2012) (quoting AEP, 564 U.S. at 421) (further citation and internal quotation marks omitted). Although Congress thus sometimes affirmatively directs the application of federal common law, "[m]ore often, federal common law develops when courts must consider federal questions that are not answered by statutes." Id. (emphasis added). Given that claims asserting injuries from global warming have an intrinsic interstate and transnational character, such claims inherently raise federal questions and fall within the settled rule that federal common law governs "the general subject of environmental law and specifically includes ambient or interstate air and water pollution." Id. at 855; see also id. ("federal common law can apply to transboundary pollution suits" such as the Plaintiff's); AEP, 564 U.S. at 421 ("Environmental protection is undoubtedly an area within national legislative power, [and] one in which federal courts may fill in statutory interstices."); see also Massachusetts v. EPA, 549 U.S. 497, 498 (2007) ("The sovereign prerogatives to force reductions in greenhouse gas emissions, to negotiate emissions treaties with developing countries, and (in some circumstances) to exercise the police power to reduce motor-vehicle emissions are now lodged in the Federal Government."); California v. BP P.L.C., 2018 WL 1064293, at \*2 (N.D. Cal. Feb. 27, 2018) (in a case raising essentially identical claims, holding that "Plaintiffs' nuisance

claims—which address the national or international geophysical phenomenon of global warming—are necessarily governed by federal common law").

- 16. The conclusion that federal common law governs an issue rests, not on a discretionary choice between federal law and state law, but on a determination that the issue is so distinctively federal in nature that application of state law to the issue would risk impairing uniquely federal interests. Boyle, 487 U.S. at 506–07; see also, e.g., Caltex Plastics, Inc. v. Lockheed Martin Corp., 824 F.3d 1156, 1159-60 (9th Cir. 2016) (liability of defense contractor to third party under government contract for weapons systems implicated "uniquely federal interests" in national security that would be impaired if disparate state-law rules were applied); Resolution Trust Corp. v. Gladstone, 895 F. Supp. 356, 362–63 (D. Mass. 1995) (applying federal common law because there was "a significant interest in having a uniform standard of liability govern the conduct of directors and officers of federally chartered, federal insured, savings and loan institutions."). In BP, the court, addressing nearly identical claims, held that "[i]f ever a problem cried out for a uniform and comprehensive solution, it is the geophysical problem described by the complaints, a problem centuries in the making (and studying) with causes ranging from volcanoes, to wildfires, to deforestation to stimulation of other greenhouse gases—and, most pertinent here, to the combustion of fossil fuels." 2018 WL 1064293, at \*3.
- 17. Although Plaintiff purports to style its nuisance and other common law claims as arising under state law, the question of whether a particular common law claim is controlled by federal common law rather than state law is itself a question of law that is governed by federal law as set forth in *Erie* and its progeny. While Plaintiff contends that its claims arise under Rhode Island law, the question of which state, if any, may apply its law to address global

climate-change issues is a question that is itself a matter of federal law, given the paramount federal interest in avoiding conflicts of law in connection with ambient air and water.

- 18. Because global warming occurs only as the result of the undifferentiated accumulated emissions of all emitters in the world over an extended period of time, any judgment as to the reasonableness of particular emissions, or as to their causal contribution to the overall phenomenon of global warming, inherently requires an evaluation at an interstate and, indeed, transnational level. Thus, even assuming that state tort law may properly address local source emissions within that specific state, the imposition of tort liability for allegedly unreasonably contributing to global warming would require an over-arching consideration of all of the emissions traceable to sales of Defendants' products in each of the states, and, in fact, in the more than 180 nations of the world. Given the Federal Government's exclusive authority over foreign affairs and foreign commerce, and its preeminent authority over interstate commerce, tort claims concerning global warming directly implicate uniquely federal interests, and a "patchwork of fifty different answers to the same fundamental global issue would be unworkable." BP, 2018 WL 1064293, at \*3. Indeed, the Supreme Court expressly held in AEP that in cases like this, "borrowing the law of a particular State would be inappropriate." 564 U.S. at 422. Such global warming-related tort claims, to the extent they exist, are therefore governed by federal common law. Kivalina, 696 F.3d at 855–56, BP, 2018 WL 1064293, at \*3.
- 19. Under the principles set forth above, Plaintiff's claims are governed by federal common law. The gravamen of Plaintiff's claims is that "production and use of Defendants' fossil fuel products plays a direct and substantial role in the unprecedented rise in emissions of greenhouse gas pollution" which "is the main driver of the gravely dangerous changes occurring to the global climate." Compl. ¶ 2; see, e.g., id. ¶¶ 45–46, 50, 95, 99–103, 229, 242, 255, 279,

- 287. Plaintiff's Complaint alleges that Defendants are responsible for "more than one in every seven tons of carbon dioxide and methane emitted worldwide," id. ¶ 19, and that "greenhouse gas pollution is the dominant factor in each of the independent causes of [global] sea level rise," id. ¶ 50; see also id. ¶ 99–103, and other natural phenomena, such as drought, extreme precipitation, and heatwaves, id. ¶¶ 74, 177, 199–201, 223, 219–24, 229(b), 232, 255, 267(c), 275, 287. As is evident from the term "global warming" itself, both the causes and the injuries Plaintiff identifies are not constrained to particular sources, cities, counties, or even states, but rather implicate inherently national and international interests, including treaty obligations and federal and international regulatory schemes. See id. ¶ 3 n.4 (describing other sources of emissions); ¶ 7 (only "14.81%" of CO<sub>2</sub> emissions are allegedly caused by Defendants); ¶ 99 (CO<sub>2</sub> emissions cause "global sea level rise") (emphasis added); see, e.g., Massachusetts, 549 U.S. at 509, 523–24 (describing Senate rejection of the Kyoto Protocol because emissionsreduction targets did not apply to "heavily polluting nations such as China and India," and EPA's determination that predicted magnitude of future Chinese and Indian emissions "offset any marginal domestic decrease"); AEP, 564 U.S. at 427–29 (describing regulatory scheme of the Clean Air Act and role of the EPA); see also The White House, Statement by President Trump on the Paris Climate Accord (June 1, 2017), available at https://www.whitehouse.gov/the-pressoffice/2017/06/01/statement-president-trump-paris-climate-accord (announcing United States withdrawal from Paris Climate Accord based on financial burdens, energy restrictions, and failure to impose proportionate restrictions on Chinese emissions).
- 20. Indeed, the Complaint itself demonstrates that the unbounded nature of greenhouse gas emissions, diversity of sources, and magnitude of the attendant consequences have catalyzed myriad federal and international efforts to understand and address such

emissions. *See, e.g.,* Compl. ¶ 149. The paramount federal interest in addressing the worldwide effect of greenhouse gas emissions is manifested in the regulatory scheme set forth in the Clean Air Act as construed in *Massachusetts v. EPA*. *See AEP*, 564 U.S. at 427–29. Federal legislation regarding greenhouse gas emissions reflects the understanding that "[t]he appropriate amount of regulation in any particular greenhouse gas-producing sector cannot be prescribed in a vacuum: as with other questions of national or international policy, informed assessment of competing interests is required. Along with the environmental benefit potentially achievable, our Nation's energy needs and the possibility of economic disruption must weigh in the balance." *Id.* at 427. As a "question[] of national or international policy," the question of how to address greenhouse gas emissions underlying the requested relief at the heart of Plaintiff's claims implicates inherently federal concerns. *See id.* Accordingly, Plaintiff's claims are necessarily governed by federal common law. *See Milwaukee II*, 451 U.S. at 312 n.7 ("[I]f federal common law exists, it is because state law cannot be used.").

## IV. THE ACTION IS REMOVABLE BECAUSE IT RAISES DISPUTED AND SUBSTANTIAL FEDERAL QUESTIONS

21. "Except as otherwise expressly provided by Act of Congress, any civil action brought in a State court of which the district courts of the United States have original jurisdiction, may be removed . . . to the district court of the United States for the district and division embracing the place where such action is pending." 28 U.S.C. § 1441(a). Federal district courts, in turn, "have original jurisdiction of all civil actions arising under the Constitution, laws, or treaties of the United States." 28 U.S.C. § 1331. The Supreme Court has held that suits apparently alleging only state-law causes of action nevertheless "arise under" federal law if the "state-law claim[s] necessarily raise a stated federal issue, actually disputed and substantial, which a federal forum may entertain without disturbing any congressionally

approved balance of federal and state judicial responsibilities." *Grable*, 545 U.S. at 314. Applying this test "calls for a common-sense accommodation of judgment to the kaleidoscopic situations that present a federal issue." *Id.* at 313.

- 22. Plaintiff's Complaint attempts to undermine and supplant federal regulation of greenhouse gas emissions and hold a national industry responsible for the alleged consequences of rising ocean levels and hydrologic cycle disruptions such as extreme precipitation and sea level rise that are allegedly caused by global climate change. There is no question that Plaintiff's claims raise a "federal issue, actually disputed and substantial," for which federal jurisdiction would not upset "any congressionally approved balance of federal and state judicial responsibilities." *Id.* at 314.
- 23. The issues of greenhouse gas emissions, global warming, hydrologic cycle disruption, and sea level rise are not unique to the State of Rhode Island, or even the United States. Yet what the Complaint attempts to do is to supplant decades of national energy, economic development, and federal environmental protection and regulatory policies by prompting a Rhode Island state court to take control over an entire industry and its interstate commercial activities, and impose massive damages contrary to the federal regulatory scheme.
- 24. Collectively as well as individually, Plaintiff's causes of action depend on the resolution of disputed and substantial federal questions in light of complex national considerations. For example, the Complaint's first cause of action seeks relief for an alleged nuisance. Indeed, "the scope and limitations of a complex federal regulatory framework are at stake in this case. And disposition of whether that framework may give rise to state law claims as an initial matter will ultimately have implications for the federal docket one way or the other."

Bd. of Comm'rs of Se. La. Flood Protection Auth. v. Tenn. Gas Pipeline Co, 850 F.3d 714, 723 (5th Cir. 2017) (cert. petition pending) ("Flood Protection Authority").

25. Under federal law, federal agencies must "assess both the costs and benefits of [an] intended regulation and, recognizing that some costs and benefits are difficult to quantify, propose or adopt a regulation only upon a reasoned determination that the benefits of the intended regulation justify its costs." Executive Order 12866, 58 Fed. Reg. 190; See also City of Oakland v. B.P. P.L.C., 2018 WL 3109726, at \*6 (N.D. Cal. June 25, 2018) ("[P]laintiffs' claims require a balancing of policy concerns—including the harmful effects of greenhouse gas emissions, our industrialized society's dependence on fossil fuels, and national security."). Under Rhode Island law, were it to apply, nuisance claims require a plaintiff to prove that the defendant's conduct is "unreasonable," which "is not determined by a simple formula," but which "will depend upon the activity in question and the magnitude of the interference it creates." State v. Lead Indus., Ass'n, Inc., 951 A.2d 428, 447 (R.I. 2008). Plaintiff alleges that Defendants, through their national and, indeed, global activities, "have created, contributed to, and assisted in creating, conditions in the State of Rhode Island that constitute a nuisance, and has permitted those conditions to persist, by, inter alia, increasing local sea level, and associated flooding, inundation, erosion, and other impacts within the State; increasing the frequency and intensity of drought in the State; increasing the frequency and intensity of extreme heat days in the State; and increasing the frequency and intensity of extreme precipitation events in the State." Compl. ¶ 227; see also id. ¶ 231. Plaintiff alleges that "[t]he seriousness of rising sea levels, higher sea level, more frequent and extreme drought, more frequent and extreme precipitation events, more frequent and extreme heat waves, and the associated consequences of those physical and environmental changes, is extremely grave, and outweighs the social utility of Defendants' conduct." *Id.* ¶ 232. Plaintiff's product liability claims require a similar risk-utility balancing. *See Castrignano v. E.R. Squibb & Sons, Inc.*, 546 A.2d 775, 779–781 (R.I. 1988).

But Congress has directed a number of federal agencies to regulate Defendants' 26. conduct, and in doing so to conduct the same analysis of benefits and impacts that Plaintiff would have the state court undertake in analyzing Plaintiff's claims. And federal agencies have performed these cost-benefit analyses. See, e.g., Final Carbon Pollution Standards for New, Modified and Reconstructed Power Plants, 80 Fed. Reg. at 64683-84 (EPA considering the impacts of "wildfire" and "extreme precipitation events," such as "droughts, floods, hurricanes, and major storms"). The benefits and harms of Defendants' conduct are broadly distributed throughout the Nation, to all residents as well as all state and government entities. Given this diffuse and broad impact, Congress has acted through a variety of federal statutes—primarily but not exclusively, the Clean Air Act—to strike the balance between energy extraction and production and environmental protections. See Clean Air Act, 42 U.S.C. § 7401(c) (Congressional statement that the goal of the Clean Air Act is "to encourage or otherwise promote reasonable Federal, State, and local governmental actions . . . for pollution prevention"); see also, e.g., Energy Reorganization Act of 1974, 42 U.S.C. § 5801 (Congressional purpose to "develop, and increase the efficiency and reliability of use of, all energy sources" while "restoring, protecting, and enhancing environmental quality"); Mining and Minerals Policy Act, 30 U.S.C. § 1201 (Congressional purpose to encourage "economic development of domestic mineral resources" balanced with "environmental needs"); Surface Mining Control and Reclamation Act, 30 U.S.C. § 1201 (Congressional findings that coal mining operations are "essential to the national interest" but must be balanced by "cooperative effort[s]... to prevent or mitigate adverse environmental effects").

- 27. The question of whether the federal agencies charged by Congress to balance energy and environmental needs for the entire Nation have struck that balance in an appropriate way is "inherently federal in character" and gives rise to federal-question jurisdiction. Buckman Co. v. Plaintiffs' Legal Comm., 531 U.S. 341, 347 (2001); see also Pet Quarters, Inc. v. Depository Trust & Clearing Corp., 559 F.3d 772, 779 (8th Cir. 2009) (affirming federal question jurisdiction where claims implicated federal agency's acts implementing federal law); Bennett v. Southwest Airlines Co., 484 F.3d 907, 909 (7th Cir. 2007) (federal removal under Grable appropriate where claims were "a collateral attack on the validity of" agency action under a highly reticulated regulatory scheme). Adjudicating these claims in federal court, including whether private rights of action are even cognizable, is appropriate because the relief sought by Plaintiff would necessarily alter the regulatory regime designed by Congress, impacting residents of the Nation far outside the state court's jurisdiction. See, e.g., Grable, 545 U.S. at 312 (claims that turn on substantial federal questions "justify resort to the experience, solicitude, and hope of uniformity that a federal forum offers on federal issues"); West Virginia ex rel. McGraw v. Eli Lilly & Co., 476 F. Supp. 2d 230, 234 (E.D.N.Y. 2007) (removal under Grable is appropriate where state common law claims implicate "an intricate federal regulatory scheme . . . requiring some degree of national uniformity in interpretation").
- 28. The Complaint also calls into question Federal Government decisions to contract with defendants for the extraction, development, and sale of fossil fuel resources on federal lands. Such national policy decisions have expanded fossil fuel production and use, and produced billions of dollars in revenue to the federal treasury. Available, affordable energy is fundamental to economic growth and prosperity generally, as well as to national security and other issues that have long been the domain of the Federal Government. Yet, Plaintiff's claims

require a determination that the complained-of conduct—the lawful activity of placing fossil fuels into the stream of interstate and foreign commerce—is unreasonable, and that determination raises a policy question that, under the Constitution and the applicable statutes, treaties, and regulations, is a federal question. See Anversa v. Partners Healthcare Sys., Inc., 835 F.3d 167, 175 (1st Cir. 2016) (determining, sua sponte, that "Article III jurisdiction exists . . . notwithstanding that the controversy is between non-diverse parties and asserts exclusively state-law claims" because "plaintiffs' claims turn on the interpretation of . . . federal regulations and the importance of those regulations to the Congressional scheme"). The cost-benefit analysis required by the claims asserted in the Complaint would thus necessarily entail a usurpation by the state court of the federal regulatory structure of an essential, national industry. "The validity of [Plaintiff's] claims would require that conduct subject to an extensive federal permitting scheme is in fact subject to implicit restraints that are created by state law." Flood Control Authority, 850 F.3d at 724; see also Bader Farms, Inc. v. Monsanto Co., No. 16-cv-299, 2017 WL 633815, at \*3 (E.D. Mo. Feb. 16, 2017) ("Count VII is in a way a collateral attack on the validity of APHIS's decision to deregulate the new seeds"); Bennett, 484 F.3d at 909 (holding that federal removal is proper under Grable "when the state proceeding amounted to a collateral attack on a federal agency's action"). Indeed, the "inevitable result of such suits," if successful, is that Defendants "would have to change [their] methods of doing business and controlling pollution to avoid the threat of ongoing liability." *Ouellette*, 479 U.S. at 495.

29. Plaintiff's claims also necessarily implicate substantial federal questions by seeking to hold Defendants liable for compensatory and punitive damages, as well as injunctive relief, based on allegations that Defendants have waged a "campaign to obscure the science of climate change" and "disseminat[ed] and funded the dissemination of information intended to

mislead customer, consumers, and regulators," which Plaintiff alleges defrauded and interfered with federal decision-making, thereby "delay[ing] efforts to curb these emissions." Compl. ¶ 186, 229; see also id. ¶¶ 251–63, 264–93.

- 30. To show causation, Plaintiff must establish that federal regulators were misled and would have adopted different energy and climate policies absent the alleged misrepresentations. Such a liability determination would require a court to construe federal regulatory decision-making standards, and determine how federal regulators would have applied those standards under counterfactual circumstances. See id. ¶ 167 (arguing that Gulf Cooperation Council "on behalf of Defendants" sought to "prevent[] U.S. adoption of the Kyoto Protocol"); see also Flood Protection Authority, 850 F.3d at 723 (finding necessary and disputed federal issue in plaintiffs' state-law tort claims because they could not "be resolved without a determination whether multiple federal statutes create a duty of care that does not otherwise exist under state law").
- 31. Plaintiff's Complaint, which seeks to hold Defendants liable for punitive damages and requests "disgorgement of profits" obtained through their business of manufacturing, producing, and/or promoting the sale of fossil fuel products, (e.g., Compl. ¶ 314–15)—despite Defendants' uncontested compliance with state and federal law—necessarily implicates numerous other disputed and substantial federal issues. Beyond the strictly jurisdictional character of the points addressed above and herein, it is notable that this litigation places at issue multiple significant federal issues, including but not limited to: (1) whether Defendants can be held liable consistent with the First Amendment for purportedly "championing . . . anti-science campaigns" that Plaintiff alleges deceived federal agencies (id. ¶ 10); (2) whether a state court may hold Defendants liable for conduct that was global in scale (production of fossil fuels), that

allegedly produced effects that are global in scale (increased CO<sub>2</sub> levels and rising sea levels), and on that basis, order Defendants to modify their conduct on a global scale (abating rising sea levels), consistent with the constitutional principles limiting the jurisdictional and geographic reach of state law and guaranteeing due process; (3) whether fossil fuel producers may be held liable, consistent with the Due Process Clause, for climate change when it is the combustion of fossil fuels—including by Plaintiff and the People of the State of Rhode Island themselves—that leads to the release of greenhouse gases into the atmosphere; (4) whether a state may impose liability under state common law when the Supreme Court has held that the very same federal common law claims are displaced by federal statute, and notwithstanding the commonsense principle that "[i]f a federal common law cause of action has been extinguished by Congressional displacement, it would be incongruous to allow it to be revived in any form," Kivalina, 696 F.3d at 857 (emphasis added); (5) whether a state court may regulate and burden on a global scale the sale and use of what federal policy has deemed an essential resource, consistent with the United States Constitution's Commerce Clause and foreign affairs doctrine, as well as other constitutional principles; (6) whether a state court may review and assess the validity of acts of foreign states in enacting and enforcing their own regulatory frameworks; and (7) whether a state court may determine the ability to sue based on alleged damages to land, such as coastal property and interstate highways (see Compl. ¶ 232), which depends on the interpretation of federal laws relating to the ownership and control of property.

32. Plaintiff's Complaint also raises substantial federal issues because the asserted claims intrude upon both foreign policy and carefully balanced regulatory considerations at the national level, including the foreign affairs doctrine. Plaintiff seeks to govern extraterritorial conduct and encroach on the foreign policy prerogative of the Federal Government's executive

branch as to climate change treaties. "There is, of course, no question that at some point an exercise of state power that touches on foreign relations must yield to the National Government's policy, given the 'concern for uniformity in this country's dealings with foreign nations' that animated the Constitution's allocation of the foreign relations power to the National Government in the first place." Am. Ins. Assoc. v. Garamendi, 539 U.S. 396, 413 (2003). Yet, this is the precise nature of Plaintiff's action brought in state court. See United States v. Belmont, 301 U.S. 324, 331 (1937) ("The external powers of the United States are to be exercised without regard to state laws or policies.... [I]n respect of our foreign relations generally, state lines disappear."); Hines v. Davidowitz, 312 U.S. 52, 63 (1941) ("Our system of government . . . requires that federal power in the field affecting foreign relations be left entirely free from local interference."); B.P., 2018 WL 3109726, at \*7 (N.D. Cal. June 25, 2018) ("Because this relief would effectively allow plaintiffs to govern conduct and control energy policy on foreign soil, we must exercise great caution."). Indeed, Plaintiff's Complaint takes issue with multiple federal decisions, threatening to upend the federal government's longstanding energy and environmental policies and "compromis[ing] the very capacity of the President to speak for the Nation with one voice in dealing with other governments" on the issue of climate change. Garamendi, 539 U.S. at 424.

33. Through its action, Plaintiff seeks to regulate greenhouse gas emissions worldwide, far beyond the borders of the United States. This is premised in part, according to Plaintiff, on Defendants' purported campaign to undermine national and international efforts, like the Kyoto Protocol, to rein in greenhouse gas emissions. Compl. ¶¶ 151, 167. Plaintiff alleges that its injuries are caused by global weather phenomena, such as increases in the Earth's ambient temperatures, ocean temperature, sea level, and extreme storm events, and that

Defendants are a substantial contributing factor to such climate change as a result of their collective operations on a worldwide basis, which Plaintiff claims accounts for more than oneseventh of total global greenhouse gas emissions. *Id.* ¶¶ 19, 199–200. But "[n]o State can rewrite our foreign policy to conform to its own domestic policies. Power over external affairs is not shared by the States; it is vested in the national government exclusively. It need not be so exercised as to conform to State laws or State policies, whether they be expressed in constitutions, statutes, or judicial decrees." *United States v. Pink*, 315 U.S. 203, 233–34 (1942). States have no authority to impose remedial schemes or regulations to address what are matters of foreign affairs. Yaman v. Yaman, 730 F.3d 1, 18 (1st Cir. 2013) ("[T]he federal government is the usual venue for decisions bearing on foreign relations."). Yet Plaintiff's Complaint seeks to replace international negotiations and Congressional and Executive decisions with their its preferred foreign policy, using the ill-suited tools of Rhode Island common and statutory law and private litigation. When states made similar efforts, enacting laws seeking to supplant or supplement foreign policy, the Supreme Court has held that state law can play no such role. See Crosby v. Nat'l Foreign Trade Council, 530 U.S. 363, 375-81 (2000); Garamendi, 539 U.S. at 420-24.

## V. THE ACTION IS REMOVABLE BECAUSE IT IS COMPLETELY PREEMPTED BY FEDERAL LAW

- 34. This Court also has original jurisdiction over this lawsuit because Plaintiff requests relief that would alter or amend the rules regarding nationwide—and even worldwide—regulation of greenhouse gas emissions. This action is completely preempted by federal law.
- 35. The Supreme Court has held that a federal court will have jurisdiction over an action alleging only state-law claims where "the extraordinary pre-emptive power [of federal law] converts an ordinary state common law complaint into one stating a federal claim for

purposes of the well-pleaded complaint rule." *Metro. Life Ins. Co. v. Taylor*, 481 U.S. 58, 65 (1987).

- transnational activity challenged by these complaints would inevitably intrude on the foreign affairs power of the federal government and is completely preempted. *See Garamendi*, 539 U.S. at 418 ("[S]tate action with more than incidental effect on foreign affairs is preempted, even absent any affirmative federal activity in the subject area of the state [action], and hence without any showing of conflict."); *see also City of Oakland*, 2018 WL 3109726, at \*7, 9 (dismissing global-warming claims because they "undoubtedly implicate[d] the interests of countless governments, both foreign and domestic," and "regulation of the worldwide problem of global warming should be determined by our political branches, not by our judiciary"); *California v. Gen. Motors Corp.*, 2007 WL 2726871,\*14 (N.D. Cal. Sept. 17, 2007) (dismissing claims against automakers because the federal government "ha[s] made foreign policy determinations regarding the United States' role in the international concern about global warming," and a "global warming nuisance tort would have an inextricable effect on . . . foreign policy").
- 37. In addition, Plaintiff's claims are preempted by the Clean Air Act. A state cause of action is preempted under the "complete preemption" doctrine where a federal statutory scheme "provide[s] the exclusive cause of action for the claim asserted and also set[s] forth procedures and remedies governing that cause of action." *Beneficial Nat'l Bank v. Anderson*, 539 U.S. 1, 8 (2003). It also requires a determination that the state-law cause of action falls within the scope of the federal cause of action, including where it "duplicates, supplements, or supplants" that cause of action. *Aetna Health Inc. v. Davila*, 542 U.S. 200, 209 (2004).

38. Both requirements for complete preemption are present here. Among other things, Plaintiff's Complaint seeks "abatement" of a nuisance it alleges Defendants have caused—namely, a rise in sea levels, an increase in the frequency and intensity of flooding, and an increase in the intensity and frequency of storms and storm-related damages. As such, it seeks regulation of greenhouse gas emissions far beyond the borders of Rhode Island and even the borders of the United States. This can be accomplished only by a nationwide and global reduction in the emission of greenhouse gases. Even assuming that such relief can be ordered against Defendants for their production and sale of fossil fuels, which are then combusted by others at a rate Plaintiff claims causes the alleged injuries, this claim must be decided in federal court because Congress has created a cause of action by which a party can seek the creation or modification of nationwide emission standards by petitioning the EPA. That federal cause of action was designed to provide the exclusive means by which a party can seek nationwide emission regulations. Because Plaintiff's state causes of action would "duplicate[], supplement[], or supplant[]" that exclusive federal cause of action, they are completely preempted. "If a federal common law cause of action has been extinguished by Congressional displacement, it would be incongruous to allow it to be revived in any form." Kivalina, 696 F.3d at 857.

## A. The Clean Air Act Provides the Exclusive Cause of Action for Challenging EPA Rulemakings

- 39. The Clean Air Act permits private parties, as well as state and municipal governments, to challenge EPA rulemakings (or the absence of such) and to petition the EPA to undertake new rulemakings. *See*, *e.g.*, 5 U.S.C. § 553(e); 42 U.S.C. §§ 7604, 7607.
- 40. The Clean Air Act provides the exclusive cause of action for regulation of nationwide emissions. The Act establishes a system by which federal and state resources are

deployed to "protect and enhance the quality of the Nation's air resources so as to promote the public health and welfare and the productive capacity of its population." 42 U.S.C. § 7401(b)(1). At the heart of this system are the emission standards set by EPA. Specific Clean Air Act provisions authorize or require emission standards to be set if certain findings are made, and such standards must comport with the statutory criteria set by Congress, consistent with the dual goals of the Act. Under the Clean Air Act, "emissions have been extensively regulated nationwide." *N.C. ex rel. Cooper v. Tenn Valley Auth.*, 615 F.3d 291, 298 (4th Cir. 2010). Regulation of greenhouse gas emissions, including carbon dioxide, is governed by the Clean Air Act, *see Massachusetts*, 549 U.S. at 528–29, and EPA has regulated these emissions under the Act, *see, e.g.*, 40 C.F.R. §§ 51.166(b)(1)(i), 52.21(b)(1)(i) (regulation of greenhouse gases through the Act's prevention of significant deterioration of air quality permitting program); 77 Fed. Reg. 62,624 (Oct. 15, 2012) (regulation of greenhouse gas emissions from light-duty motor vehicles); 81 Fed. Reg. 73,478 (Oct. 25, 2016) (regulation of greenhouse gas emissions from medium- and heavy-duty engines and motor vehicles).

- 41. Congress manifested a clear intent that judicial review of Clean Air Act matters must take place in federal court. 42 U.S.C. § 7607(b).
- 42. This congressionally provided statutory and regulatory scheme is thus the "exclusive" means for seeking the nationwide regulation of greenhouse gas emissions and "set[s] forth procedures and remedies" for that relief, *Beneficial Nat'l Bank*, 539 U.S. at 8, irrespective of the savings clauses applicable to some other types of claims. At least one federal court has observed that the Clean Air Act preempts such state common law nuisance cases because "[i]f courts across the nation were to use the vagaries of public nuisance doctrine to overturn the carefully enacted rules governing airborne emissions, it would be increasingly difficult for

anyone to determine what standards govern. Energy policy cannot be set, and the environment cannot prosper, in this way." *N.C. ex rel. Cooper v. Tenn. Valley Auth.*, 615 F.3d at 298.

- B. Plaintiff's Asserted State-Law Causes of Action Duplicate, Supplement, and/or Supplant the Federal Cause of Action
- 43. Plaintiff asks the Court to order Defendants to "abate nuisances" caused by an "increase in global mean sea surface height and disruptions to the hydrologic cycle, including . . . more frequent and extreme droughts, more frequent and extreme precipitation events, more frequent and extreme heatwaves, and the associated consequences of those physical and environmental changes[.]" Compl. ¶¶ 13, 199; see also id., Prayer for Relief (requesting "[e]quitable relief, including abatement of the nuisances complained of herein").
- 44. According to Plaintiff's own allegations, the alleged nuisances can be abated only by a global—or at the very least national—reduction in greenhouse gas emissions. *See* Compl. ¶¶ 248 ("[I]t is not possible to determine the source of any particular individual molecule of CO<sub>2</sub> in the atmosphere attributable to anthropogenic sources because such greenhouse gas molecules do not bear markers that permit tracing them to their source, and because greenhouse gases quickly diffuse and comingle in the atmosphere."); *id.* ¶ 97 (describing "global" greenhouse gas emissions relating to fossil fuel products). Indeed, Plaintiff's allegations purport to show that Defendants "undertook a momentous effort to evade *international* and *national* regulation of greenhouse gas emissions"—*not* state or local regulations. *Id.* ¶ 176 (emphases added); *see also id.* ¶ 151 ("Defendants embarked on a decades-long campaign designed to . . . undermine national and international efforts like the Kyoto Protocol to rein in greenhouse gas emissions."); *id.* ¶ 157 (acknowledging, *inter alia*, federal legislative efforts to regulate CO<sub>2</sub> and other greenhouse gases that allegedly "prompted Defendants to change their course of action . . . to a

public campaign aimed at evading regulation"); *id.* ¶¶ 149, 165(a), 167 (describing alleged efforts to encourage the United States to reject the international Kyoto Protocol).

- 45. Plaintiff's state-law tort claims are effectively an end-run around a petition for a rulemaking regarding greenhouse gas emissions because they seek to regulate nationwide emissions that Plaintiff concedes conform to EPA's emission standards. *See, e.g., San Diego Bldg. Trades Council v. Garmon*, 359 U.S. 236, 247 (1959); *Cipollone v. Liggett Grp., Inc.*, 505 U.S. 504, 539 (1992). The claims would require precisely the cost-benefit analysis of emissions that the EPA is charged with undertaking and would directly interfere with the EPA's determinations. *See supra* ¶¶ 26–27. Because Congress has established a clear and detailed process by which a party can petition the EPA to establish stricter nationwide emissions standards, Plaintiff's claims are completely preempted by the Clean Air Act.
- 46. Because Congress has provided an exclusive statutory remedy for the regulation of greenhouse gas emissions which provides federal procedures and remedies for that cause of action, and because Plaintiff's claims fall within the scope of the federal cause of action, Plaintiff's claims are completely preempted by federal law and this Court has federal-question jurisdiction.

## VI. THE ACTION IS REMOVABLE UNDER THE OUTER CONTINENTAL SHELF LANDS ACT

47. This Court also has original jurisdiction pursuant to the Outer Continental Shelf Lands Act ("OCSLA"). 43 U.S.C. § 1349(b); *see Tenn. Gas Pipeline*, 87 F.3d at 155. This action "aris[es] out of, or in connection with (A) any operation conducted on the outer Continental Shelf which involves exploration, development, or production of the minerals, or the subsoil or seabed of the outer Continental Shelf, or which involves rights to such minerals." 43 U.S.C. § 1349(b)(1); *In re Deepwater Horizon*, 745 F.3d 157, 163 (5th Cir. 2014) ("th[e]

language [of § 1349(b)(1)] [i]s straightforward and broad"). The outer continental shelf ("OCS") includes all submerged lands that belong to the United States but are not part of any State. 43 U.S.C. §§ 1301, 1331.

- The breadth of federal jurisdiction granted by OCSLA reflects the Act's 48. "expansive substantive reach." See EP Operating Ltd. P'ship v. Placid Oil Co., 26 F.3d 563, 569 (5th Cir. 1994). "OCSLA was passed . . . to establish federal ownership and control over the mineral wealth of the OCS and to provide for the development of those natural resources." Id. at 566. "[T]he efficient exploitation of the minerals of the OCS . . . was . . . a primary purpose for OCSLA." Amoco Prod. Co. v. Sea Robin Pipeline Co., 844 F.2d 1202, 1210 (5th Cir. 1988). Indeed, OCSLA declares it "to be the policy of the United States that ... the outer Continental Shelf ... should be made available for expeditious and orderly development." 43 U.S.C. § 1332(3). It further provides that "since exploration, development, and production of the minerals of the outer Continental Shelf will have significant impacts on coastal and non-coastal areas of the coastal States ... such States, and through such States, affected local governments, are entitled to an opportunity to participate, to the extent consistent with the national interest, in the policy and planning decisions made by the Federal Government relating to exploration for, and development and production of, minerals of the outer Continental Shelf." Id. § 1332(4) (emphasis added).
- 49. When enacting Section 1349(b)(1), "Congress intended for the judicial power of the United States to be extended to the entire range of legal disputes that it knew would arise relating to resource development on the [OCS]." *Laredo Offshore Constructors, Inc. v. Hunt Oil. Co.*, 754 F.2d 1223, 1228 (5th Cir. 1985). Consistent with Congress' intent, courts repeatedly have found OCSLA jurisdiction where resolution of the dispute foreseeably could

affect the efficient exploitation of minerals from the OCS.<sup>3</sup> *See, e.g., EP Operating*, 26 F.3d at 569–70; *United Offshore v. S. Deepwater Pipeline*, 899 F.2d 405, 407 (5th Cir. 1990).

- 50. OCSLA jurisdiction exists even if the Complaint pleads no substantive OCSLA claims. See, e.g., In re Deepwater Horizon, 745 F.3d at 163. The Court, moreover, may look beyond the facts alleged in the Complaint to determine that OCSLA jurisdiction exists. See, e.g., Plains Gas Solutions, LLC v. Tenn. Gas Pipeline Co., LLC, 46 F. Supp. 3d 701, 703 (S.D. Tex. 2014); St. Joe Co. v. Transocean Offshore Deepwater Drilling Inc., 774 F. Supp. 2d 596, 2011 A.M.C. 2624, 2640 (D. Del. 2011) (citing Amoco Prod. Co. v. Sea Robin Pipeline Co., 844 F.2d 1202, 1205 (5th Cir. 1998)).
- below the Department of Interior administers an extensive federal leasing program aiming to develop and exploit the oil and gas resources of the federal Continental Shelf. 43 U.S.C. § 1334 et seq. Pursuant to this authority, the Interior Department "administers more than 5,000 active oil and gas leases on nearly 27 million OCS acres. "In FY 2015, production from these leases generated \$4.4 billion in leasing revenue . . . . [and] provided more than 550 million barrels of oil and 1.35 trillion cubic feet of natural gas, accounting for about sixteen percent of the Nation's oil production and about five percent of domestic natural gas production." Statement of Abigail Ross Hopper, Director, Bureau of Ocean Energy Management, Before the House Committee on Natural Resources (Mar. 2, 2016), available at https://www.boem.gov/FY2017-Budget-Testimony-03-01-2016. Certain Defendants here, of course, participate very substantially in the federal OCS leasing program. For example, from

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>3</sup> As stated in 43 U.S.C. § 1333(a)(1): "The Constitution and laws and civil and political jurisdiction of the United States are extended to the subsoil and seabed of the outer Continental Shelf and to all artificial islands, and all installations and other devices permanently or temporarily attached to the seabed . . . for the purpose of exploring for, developing, or producing resources therefrom . . . to the same extent as if the outer Continental Shelf were an area of exclusive Federal jurisdiction located within a State . . . ."

1947 to 1995, Chevron U.S.A. Inc. produced 1.9 billion barrels of crude oil and 11 billion barrels of natural gas from the federal outer continental shelf in the Gulf of Mexico alone. U.S. Dep't of Int., Minerals Mgmt. Serv., Gulf of Mex. Region, Prod. by Operator Ranked by Vol. (1947–1995), available at

https://www.data.boem.gov/Production/Files/Rank%20File%20Gas%201947%-20-

<u>%201995.pdf</u>. In 2016, Chevron U.S.A. produced over 49 million barrels of crude oil and 50 million barrels of natural gas from the outer continental shelf on the Gulf of Mexico. U.S. Dep't of Int., Bureau of Safety & Envtl. Enf't, Gulf of Mex. Region, Prod. by Operator Ranked by Vol. (2016), available at

other Defendants conduct, and have for decades conducted, similar oil and gas operations on the federal OCS; indeed, Defendants and their affiliated companies presently hold approximately 32.95% of all outer continental shelf leases. *See* Bureau of Ocean Energy Management, Lease Owner Information, *available at* <a href="https://www.data.boem.gov/Leasing/LeaseOwner/Default.aspx">https://www.data.boem.gov/Leasing/LeaseOwner/Default.aspx</a>. For example, certain BP companies and Exxon Mobil currently own lease interests in, and the BP companies operate, "one of the largest deepwater producing fields in the Gulf of Mexico," which is capable of producing up to 250,000 barrels of oil per day. *See* Thunder Horse Field Fact Sheet (last visited Aug. 21, 2017), *available at* <a href="http://www.bp.com/content/dam/bp-country/en\_us/PDF/Thunder\_Horse\_Fact\_Sheet\_6\_14\_2013.pdf">http://www.bp.com/content/dam/bp-country/en\_us/PDF/Thunder\_Horse\_Fact\_Sheet\_6\_14\_2013.pdf</a>. And as noted on the BP website, production from this and other OCS activities will continue into the future. *Id.* ("BP intends to sustain its leading position as an active participant in all facets of the Deepwater US Gulf of Mexico—as an explorer, developer, and operator."). A substantial portion of the national

consumption of fossil fuel products stems from production on federal lands, as approved by Congress and Executive Branch decision-makers.

- "arise[] out of, or in connection with," Defendants' "operation[s] 'conducted on the outer Continental Shelf' that involve "the exploration and production of minerals." *In re Deepwater Horizon*, 745 F.3d at 163. Plaintiff, in fact, challenges *all of* Defendants' "extraction . . . of coal, oil, and natural gas" activities, *e.g.*, Compl. ¶ 3, 19, a substantial quantum of which arise from OCS operations, *see* Ranking Operator by Oil, Bureau of Ocean Energy Mgmt., *available at* <a href="https://www.data.boem.gov/Main/HtmlPage.aspx?page=rankOil">https://www.data.boem.gov/Main/HtmlPage.aspx?page=rankOil</a> (documenting Chevron's oil and natural gas production on the federal outer continental shelf from 1947 to 2017). Plaintiff alleges that emissions have risen due to increased OCS extraction technologies. *See*, *e.g.*, Compl. ¶ 179–80 (discussing arctic offshore drilling equipment and patents which may be relevant to conduct near Alaskan OCS). And Plaintiff challenges energy projects that occurred in Canadian waters. Compl. ¶ 141, 144. Defendants conduct similar activity in American waters and many of the emissions Plaintiff challenges necessarily arise from the use of fossil fuels extracted from the OCS.
- 53. The relief sought also arises out of and impacts OCS extraction and development. *See, e.g.*, Compl., Prayer for Relief (seeking damages designed to cripple the energy industry and equitable relief that would no doubt rein in extraction, including that on the OCS). And "any dispute that alters the progress of production activities on the OCS threatens to impair the total recovery of the federally-owned minerals from the reservoir or reservoirs underlying the OCS. Congress intended such a dispute to be within the grant of federal jurisdiction contained in § 1349." *Amoco Prod. Co.*, 844 F.2d at 1211.

### VII. THE ACTION IS REMOVABLE UNDER THE FEDERAL OFFICER REMOVAL STATUTE

- officer (or any person acting under that officer) of the United States or of any agency thereof . . . for or relating to any act under color of such office." 28 U.S.C. § 1442(a)(1). A party seeking removal under Section 1442 "must demonstrate that (1) it was acting under the direction of a federal officer; (2) it has a colorable federal defense; and (3) that there is a causal connection between the acts taken under federal direction and a plaintiff's claim(s) against it." *Shepherd v. Air & Liquid Sys. Corp.*, 2012 WL 5874781, at \*2 (D.R.I. Nov. 20, 2012). All three elements are satisfied here for many Defendants, which have engaged in activities pursuant to the directions of federal officers that, assuming the truth of Plaintiff's allegations, have a causal nexus to Plaintiff's claims, and which have colorable federal defenses to Plaintiff's claims, including, for example, performing pursuant to government mandates and contracts, performing functions for the U.S. military, and engaging in activities on federal lands pursuant to federal leases.
- Defendants' alleged actions, taken pursuant to a federal officer's direction, and Plaintiff's claims. In *Camacho v. Autoridad de Telefonos de Puerto Rico*, 868 F.2d 482 (1st Cir. 1989), the First Circuit held removal proper where several telephone companies, which were sued for participating in a government wiretap, showed extensive evidence of federal control over its activities. "[A]t all times referred to in said complaint, co-defendants . . . were acting under express orders, control and directions of federal officers." 868 F.2d at 486–87. Here, Plaintiff's causation and damages allegations depend on the activities of Defendants over the past decades—many of which were undertaken at the direction of, and under close supervision and control by, federal officials.

- minerals, oil and gas on federal lands pursuant to leases governed by the Outer Continental Shelf Lands Act as described above. *E.g.*, Emanuel Decl., Exs. B, C. In doing so, those Defendants were "acting under' a federal 'official'" within the meaning of Section 1442(a)(1). *Watson v. Philip Morris Cos., Inc.*, 551 U.S. 142, 153 (2007). Under OCSLA, the Interior Department is charged with "manag[ing] access to, and . . . receiv[ing] a fair return for, the energy and mineral resources of the Outer Continental Shelf." Statement of Walter Cruickshank, Deputy Director, Bureau of Ocean Energy Management, Before The Committee On Natural Resources, July, 6, 2016, *available at* https://www.boem.gov/Congressional-Testimony-Cruickshank-07062016/. To fulfill this statutory obligation, the Interior officials maintain and administer the OCS leasing program, under which parties such as Defendants are required to conduct exploration, development and production activities that, "in the absence of a contract with a private firm, the Government itself would have had to perform." *Watson*, 551 U.S. at 154.
- 57. OCS leases obligate lessees like Defendants to "develop[] . . . the leased area" diligently, including carrying out exploration, development and production activities approved by Interior Department officials for the express purpose of "maximiz[ing] the ultimate recovery of hydrocarbons from the leased area." Petros Decl., Ex. C § 10. Indeed, for decades Defendants' OCSLA leases have instructed that "[t]he Lessee *shall comply* with all applicable regulations, orders, written instructions, and the terms and conditions set forth in this lease" and that "[a]fter due notice in writing, the Lessee *shall conduct* such OCS mining activities at such rates as the Lessor may require in order that the Leased Area or any part thereof may be properly and timely developed and produced in accordance with sound operating principles." Ex. B § 10 (emphasis added). All drilling takes place "in accordance with an approved exploration plan

(EP), development and production plan (DPP) or development operations coordination document (DOCD) [as well as] approval conditions"—all of which must undergo extensive review and approval by federal authorities, and all of which further had to conform to "diligence" and "sound conservation practices." Ex. C §§ 9, 10. Federal officers further have reserved the rights to control the rates of mining (Ex. B § 10) and to obtain "prompt access" to facilities and records (Ex. B § 11, Ex. C § 12). The government also maintains certain controls over how the leased oil/gas/minerals are disposed of once they are removed from the ground, as by preconditioning the lease on a right of first refusal to purchase all materials "[i]n time of war or when the President of the United States shall so prescribe" (Ex. B § 14, Ex. C § 15(d)), and mandating that 20% of all crude and natural gas produced pursuant to drilling leases be offered "to small or independent refiners" (Ex. C § 15(c)). The Federal Treasury has reaped enormous financial benefits from those policy decisions in the form of statutory and regulatory royalty regimes that have resulted in billions of dollars of revenue to the Federal Government.

58. Certain Defendants have also engaged in the exploration and production of fossil fuels pursuant to agreements with federal agencies. For example, in June 1944, the Standard Oil Company (a Chevron predecessor) and the U.S. Navy entered into a contract "to govern the joint operation and production of the oil and gas deposits . . . of the Elk Hills Reserve," a strategic petroleum reserve maintained by the Navy. *Chevron U.S.A., Inc. v. United States*, 116 Fed. Cl. 202, 205 (Fed. Cl. 2014). "The Elk Hills Naval Petroleum Reserve (NPR-1) . . . was originally established in 1912 to provide a source of liquid fuels for the armed forces during national emergencies." GAO Fact Sheet, Naval Petroleum Reserves – Oil Sales Procedures and Prices at Elk Hills, April Through December 1986 (Jan. 1987) ("GAO Fact Sheet"), *available at* <a href="http://www.gao.gov/assets/90/87497.pdf">http://www.gao.gov/assets/90/87497.pdf</a>. In response to the OPEC oil embargo in 1973–74, the

Naval Petroleum Reserves Production Act of 1976 (Public Law 94-258, April 5, 1976) was enacted, which "authorized and directed that NPR-1 be produced at the maximum efficient rate for 6 years." *Id.* In 1977, Congress "transferred the Navy's interests and management obligations to [the Department of Energy]," and Chevron continued its interest in the joint operation until 1997. *Id.* That contract governing Standard's rights shows the federal government's "full and absolute" power and "complete control" over fossil fuel exploration, production, and sales at the reserve:

- 59. The plan was designed to "[a]fford [the] Navy a means of acquiring *complete* control over the development of the entire Reserve and the production of oil therefrom." Ex. D, Recitals § 6(d)(i) (emphases added).
- 60. "[The] Navy shall, subject to the provisions hereof, have the exclusive control over the exploration, prospecting development and operation of the Reserve[.]" Ex. D § 3(a).
- 61. "[The] Navy shall have *full and absolute power* to determine from time to time the rate of prospecting and development on, and the quantity and rate of production from, the Reserve, and may from time to time shut in wells on the Reserve if it so desires." Ex. D § 4(a) (emphasis added).
- 62. "[A]ll exploration, prospecting, development, and producing operations on the Reserve" occurred "under the supervision and direction of an Operating Committee" tasked with "supervis[ing]" operations and "requir[ing] the use of sound oil field engineering practices designed to achieve the maximum economic recovery of oil from the reserve." Ex. D § 3(b). In the event of disagreement, "such matter shall be referred to the Secretary of the Navy for determination; and his decision in each such instance shall be final and binding upon Navy and Standard." Ex. D § 9(a).

- 63. The Navy retained ultimate and even "absolute" discretion to suspend production, decrease the minimum amount of production per day that Standard was entitled to receive, or increase the rate of production. Ex. D §§ 4(b), 5(d)(1).
- 64. The contract demonstrates that Defendants' activities under federal officers went far beyond simple compliance with the law or participation in a regulated industry
- 65. Defendants also have supplied motor vehicle fuels under agreements with the federal government, including the Armed Forces. For instance, CITGO Petroleum Corporation ("CITGO") was a party to fuel supply agreements with the Navy Exchange Service Command ("NEXCOM"), which is a department of the Naval Supply Systems Command of the U.S. Navy. Among other things, NEXCOM sells goods and services at a savings to active duty military, retirees, reservists, and their families. Starting in approximately 1988 through approximately 2012, pursuant to its agreements with NEXCOM, CITGO supplied CITGO branded gasoline and diesel fuel to NEXCOM for service stations operated by NEXCOM on Navy bases located in a number of states across the country. The NEXCOM agreements contained detailed fuel specifications, and CITGO complied with these government specifications in supplying the fuel to NEXCOM. CITGO also contracted with NEXCOM to provide demolition, site preparation, design, construction, and related financing services to build new gasoline service stations on Navy bases in the 1990s.
- 66. As discussed above, these and other federal activities are encompassed in Plaintiff's Complaint. *See supra* ¶¶ 49–62. Plaintiff alleges that the drilling and mining operations Defendants performed led to the sale of fossil fuels—including to the Federal Government—which led to the release of greenhouse gases by end-users—including to the Federal Government. Furthermore, the oil and gas Defendants extracted—which the Federal

Government (i) reserved the right to buy in total in the event of a time of war or whenever the President so prescribed and (ii) has purchased from Defendants to fuel its military operations—is the very same oil and gas that Plaintiff alleges is a "defective" product giving rise to strict liability. Accordingly, Plaintiff seeks to hold Defendants liable for the very activities Defendants performed under the control of a federal official, and thus the nexus element has been satisfied.

67. Third, Defendants intend to raise numerous meritorious federal defenses, including preemption, *see Camacho*, 868 F.2d at 487, the government contractor defense, *see Boyle v. United Techs. Corp.*, 487 U.S. 500 (1988); *Shepherd*, 2012 WL 5874781, at \*6, 8, 9, and others. In addition, Plaintiff's claims are barred by the United States Constitution, including the Commerce and Due Process clauses, as well as the First Amendment and the foreign affairs doctrine. These and other federal defenses are more than colorable. *See Willingham v. Morgan*, 395 U.S. 402, 407 (1969) (a defendant invoking Section 1442(a)(1) "need not win his case before he can have it removed"). Accordingly, removal under Section 1442 is proper.

### VIII. THE ACTION IS REMOVABLE BECAUSE THE CASE ARISES FROM ACTS ARISING FROM MULTIPLE FEDERAL ENCLAVES

68. This Court also has original jurisdiction under the federal enclave doctrine. The Constitution authorizes Congress to "exercise exclusive legislation in all cases whatsoever" over all places purchased with the consent of a state "for the erection of forts, magazines, arsenals, dock-yards, and other needful buildings." U.S. Const., art. I, § 8, cl. 17. "Federal courts have federal question jurisdiction over tort claims that arise on 'federal enclaves.'" *Serrano v. Consol. Waste Servs. Corp.*, 2017 WL 1097061, at \*1 (D.P.R. Mar. 23, 2017) (*quoting Durham v. Lockheed Martin Corp.*, 445 F.3d 1247, 1250 (9th Cir. 2006)); *see also Totah v. Bies*, 2011 WL 1324471, at \*2 (N.D. Cal. Apr. 6, 2011) (denying motion to remand where defamation claim arose in the Presidio in San Francisco, a federal enclave). The "key factor" in determining

whether a federal court has federal enclave jurisdiction "is the location of the plaintiff's injury or where the specific cause of action arose." *Sparling v. Doyle*, 2014 WL 2448926, at \*3 (W.D. Tex. May 30, 2014); *see also Fung v. Abex Corp.*, 816 F. Supp. 569, 571 (N.D. Cal. 1992) ("Failure to indicate the federal enclave status and location of the exposure will not shield plaintiffs from the consequences of this federal enclave status."); *Bd. of Comm'rs of Se. La. Flood Protection Auth.-E. v. Tenn. Gas Pipeline Co., LLC*, 29 F. Supp. 3d 808, 831 (E.D. La. 2014) (noting that defendants' "conduct" or "the damage complained of" must occur on a federal enclave). Federal jurisdiction is available if some of the events or damages alleged in the complaint occurred on a federal enclave. *See Durham*, 445 F.3d at 1250; *Bell v. Arvin Meritor, Inc.*, 2012 WL 1110001, at \*2 (N.D. Cal. Apr. 2, 2012) (finding federal enclave jurisdiction where "some of the[] locations ... are federal enclaves"); *Totah*, 2011 WL 1324471, at \*2 (holding that court can "exercise supplemental jurisdiction over related claims" that did not arise on federal enclave).

- 69. Three requirements exist for land to be a federal enclave: (1) the United States must have acquired the land from a state; (2) the state legislature must have consented to the jurisdiction of the Federal Government; and (3) the United States must have accepted jurisdiction. *Wood v. Am. Crescent Elevator Corp.*, 2011 WL 1870218, at \*2 (E.D. La. May 16, 2011).
- 70. Upon information and belief, the federal government owns federal enclaves in the area at issue where Plaintiff's "damage complained of" allegedly occurs. *Tenn. Gas Pipeline*, 29 F. Supp. 3d at 831. Indeed, Plaintiff broadly alleges injuries to huge swaths of the State, *see* Compl. ¶¶ 200–208, and "[f]ailure to indicate the federal enclave status and location of the

exposure will not shield plaintiffs from the consequences of this federal enclave status," *Fung*, 816 F. Supp. at 571.

- 71. On information and belief, Defendants maintain or maintained oil and gas operations on military bases or other federal enclaves such that the Complaint, which bases the claims on the "extracting, refining, processing, producing, promoting and marketing of fossil fuel products" (Compl. ¶ 19), arises under federal law. See, e.g., Humble Pipe Line Co. v. Waggoner, 376 U.S. 369, 372 (1964) (noting that the United States exercises exclusive jurisdiction over oil and gas rights within Barksdale Air Force Base in Louisiana); see also Mississippi River Fuel Corp. v. Cocreham, 390 F.2d 34, 35 (5th Cir. 1968) (on Barksdale AFB, "the reduction of fugitive oil and gas to possession and ownership[] takes place within the exclusive jurisdiction of the United States"). Indeed, as of 2000, approximately 14% of the National Wildlife Refuge System "had oil or gas activities on their land," and these activities were spread across 22 different states. See GAO, U.S. Fish and Wildlife Service: Information on Oil and Gas Activities in the National Wildlife Refuge (Oct. 30, 2001), available at http://www.gao.gov/new.items/d0264r.pdf. Furthermore, Chevron and its predecessor companies for many years engaged in production activities on the Elk Hills Reserve—a strategic oil reserve maintained by the Naval Department—pursuant to a joint operating agreement with the Navy. See Chevron U.S.A., 116 Fed. Cl. at 205. Pursuant to that agreement, Standard Oil "operat[ed] the lands of Navy and Standard in the Reserve." Ex. D to Petros Decl. at 4.
- 72. In addition, the Complaint relies upon conduct occurring in the District of Columbia—itself a federal enclave, *see*, *e.g.*, *Collier v. District of Columbia*, 46 F. Supp. 3d 6 (D.D.C. 2014); *Hobson v. Hansen*, 265 F. Supp. 902, 930 (D.D.C. 1967)—as a basis for Plaintiff's claims. Indeed, Plaintiff complains that Defendants' supposedly wrongful conduct

included their memberships in various "trade association[s]," and providing funding to "think tanks," which allegedly had the effect of "evad[ing] regulation" of fossil fuel products by "deceiv[ing]" policymakers about the role of fossil fuel products in causing global warming. Compl. ¶¶ 172–73, 177. The Complaint also points to Defendants' purported funding of "lobbyist[s]" to influence legislation and legislative priorities. *Id.* ¶ 171. Here, too, "some of the[] locations" giving rise to Plaintiff's claims "are federal enclaves," further underscoring the presence of federal jurisdiction. *Bell*, 2012 WL 1110001, at \*2. As the Ninth Circuit contemplated in *Jacobson v. U.S. Postal Serv.*, 993 F.2d 649, 657 (9th Cir. 1992), free speech placed at issue in a federal enclave falls under the jurisdiction of the federal courts. *Id.* (observing that newspaper vendors were required to obtain permits pursuant to a federal statute to sell newspapers in front of U.S. post office locations, which the Court deemed to be "within the federal enclave"). Because Plaintiff claims that Defendants' speech within the federal enclave of the District of Columbia was, among other alleged causes, the basis of its injury, this Court is the only forum suited to adjudicate the merits of this dispute.

## IX. THE ACTION IS REMOVABLE UNDER THE BANKRUPTCY REMOVAL STATUTE

73. The Bankruptcy Removal Statute allows removal of "any claim or cause of action in a civil action other than a proceeding before the United States Tax Court or a civil action by a governmental unit to enforce such governmental unit's police or regulatory power, to the district court for the district where such civil action is pending, if such district court has jurisdiction of such claim or cause of action under section 1334 of this title." 28 U.S.C. § 1452(a). Section 1334, in turn, provides that "the district courts shall have original but not exclusive jurisdiction of all civil proceedings, arising under Title 11, or arising in or related to cases under title 11" of the United States Code. 28 U.S.C. § 1334(b). "[T]he test for determining whether a civil

proceeding is related to bankruptcy is whether the outcome of that proceeding could conceivably have any effect on the estate being administered in bankruptcy." In re G.S.F. Corp., 938 F.2d 1467, 1475 (1st Cir. 1991) (quoting *Pacor v. Higgins*, 743 F.2d 984, 994 (3d Cir. 1984)). The "statutory grant of 'related to' jurisdiction is quite broad." In re Boston Regional Medical Center, Inc., 410 F.3d 100, 105 (1st Cir. 2005); see also Sasson v. Sokoloff (In re Sasson), 424 F.3d 864, 868 (9th Cir. 2005) ("related to' jurisdiction is very broad, including nearly every matter directly or indirectly related to the bankruptcy."). There are "situations in which the fact that particular litigation arises after the confirmation of a reorganization plan will not defeat an attempted exercise of bankruptcy jurisdiction." Boston Medical, 410 F.3d at 107. The First Circuit has held that where a Chapter 11 plan has been confirmed, there must be a "close nexus" between the post-confirmation case and the bankruptcy plan for related-to jurisdiction to exist. Id. at 106 (citing In re Pegasus Gold Corp., 394 F.3d 1189, 1194 (9th Cir. 2005); In re Resorts Int'l, Inc., 372 F.3d 154, 166-67 (3d Cir. 2004)). "[A] close nexus exists between a postconfirmation matter and a closed bankruptcy proceeding sufficient to support jurisdiction when the matter 'affect[s] the interpretation, implementation, consummation, execution, or administration of the confirmed plan." In re Wilshire Courtyard, 729 F.3d 1279, 1289 (9th Cir. 2013) (quoting *Pegasus Gold*, 394 F.3d at 1194).

74. Plaintiff's claims are purportedly predicated on historical activities of Defendants, including predecessor companies, subsidiaries, and companies that Defendants may have acquired or with which they may have merged, as well as numerous unnamed but now bankrupt entities. Indeed, Plaintiff explicitly premises its theories of liability on the actions of

Defendants' subsidiaries. *See, e.g.*, Compl ¶¶ 156, 183, 190(a), 241, 254.<sup>4</sup> Because there are hundreds of non-joined necessary and indispensable parties, there are many other Title 11 cases that may be related. Accordingly, Plaintiff's broad claim has the required "close nexus" with Chapter 11 plans to support federal jurisdiction. *Wilshire Courtyard*, 729 F.3d at 1289; *see also In re Dow Corning Corp.*, 86 F.3d 482, 493–94 (6th Cir. 1996).

75. As just one example of how Plaintiff's historical allegations have created a "close nexus" with a Chapter 11 plan, one of Chevron's current subsidiaries, Texaco Inc., filed for bankruptcy in 1987. In re Texaco Inc., 87 B 20142 (Bankr. S.D.N.Y. 1987). The Chapter 11 plan, which was confirmed in 1988, bars certain claims against Texaco arising prior to March 15, 1988. *Id.* Dkt. 1743. Plaintiff's Complaint alleges that Texaco, as well as unnamed Chevron "predecessors" and "subsidiaries," engaged in culpable conduct prior to March 15, 1988, and it attributes this conduct to defendant "Chevron." See Compl. ¶ 21. Plaintiff's claims against the Chevron Defendants thus are at least partially barred by Texaco's confirmed Chapter 11 plan to the extent that the claims relate to Texaco's conduct prior to 1988. Accordingly, even though Texaco's Chapter 11 plan has been confirmed and consummated, Plaintiff's claim has a "close nexus" to the plan to support federal jurisdiction. Boston Medical, 410 F.3d at 107; see also Wilshire Courtyard, 729 F.3d at 1292–93 (federal court had "related to' subject matter jurisdiction under the *Pegasus Gold* test despite the fact that the Plan transactions have been long since consummated"). Another Defendant in this action, Getty Petroleum Marketing Inc., emerged from bankruptcy less than six years ago. See In re Getty Petroleum Marketing Inc. et

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>4</sup> To the extent Plaintiff seeks to hold Defendants liable for the conduct of their subsidiaries, affiliates or other related entities, such attempts are improper. *See, e.g., Abdallah v. Bain Capital LLC*, 752 F.3d 114, 121 (1st Cir. 2014); *Parrillo v. Giroux Co.*, 426 A.2d 1313, 1321 (R.I. 1981).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>5</sup> There are pending motions to reopen Texaco's bankruptcy case, which motions are being actively litigated in the Bankruptcy Court. *See id.* Dkt. 3923.

al., No. 11-15606, Dkt. 714 (S.D.N.Y. Bankr. Ct. Aug. 24, 2012) (order confirming Chapter 11 plan). To the extent Plaintiff's claims implicate Getty's pre-2012 conduct, the claims will require the court to interpret the terms of the confirmation plan to decide whether the claims have been discharged. Accordingly, Plaintiff's claims have a "close nexus" to Getty's bankruptcy plan.

76. Finally, Plaintiff's action is not brought to enforce the state's police or regulatory power, 28 U.S.C. § 1452(a), but rather to protect its "pecuniary interest," *City & Cnty. of San Francisco v. PG&E Corp.*, 433 F.3d 1115, 1124 (9th Cir. 2006). As demonstrated by Plaintiff's request for compensatory and punitive damages, as well as disgorgement of profits, (Compl., 331, Prayer for Relief), this action is primarily pecuniary in nature. *See also id.* ¶ 213 ("The State has incurred and will continue to incur expenses in planning, preparing for, and treating the public health impacts associated with anthropogenic global warming."); 232(c) (alleging that the State must spend public funds on "mitigation of and/or adaptation to climate change impacts"); 247 (alleging that the State "ha[s] sustained and will sustain substantial expenses and damages . . . including damage to publicly owned infrastructure and real property"). These allegations make clear that Plaintiff's action is primarily brought to fill the State's coffers by reaping a financial windfall. *See PG&E Corp.*, 433 F.3d at 1125 n.11.

#### X. THE COURT HAS JURISDICTION AND REMOVAL IS PROPER

- 77. Based on the foregoing allegations from the Complaint, this Court has original jurisdiction over this action under 28 U.S.C. § 1331. Accordingly, removal of this action is proper under 28 U.S.C. §§ 1334, 1441, 1442, 1452, and 1446, as well as 43 U.S.C. §§ 1349(b).
- 78. The United States District Court for the District of Rhode Island is the appropriate venue for removal pursuant to 28 U.S.C. § 1441(a) because it embraces the place where Plaintiff

originally filed this case, in the Providence County Superior Court, Rhode Island. *See* 28 U.S.C. § 84(a); 28 U.S.C. § 1441(a).

- 79. SOPC has not yet been served, *see* Emanuel Decl., ¶ 2, but "a defendant generally need not wait until formal receipt of service to remove," *Novak v. Bank of New York Mellon*Trust Co., NA., 783 F.3d 910 (1st Cir. 2015). There is no requirement that any other defendant consent because SOPC has not removed this action "solely under section 1441(a)." 28 U.S.C. § 1446(b)(2)(A).<sup>6</sup> Nevertheless, all Defendants who have been served have consented to removal. Emanuel Decl. ¶ 4; 28 U.S.C. § 1446(b)(2)(A). Pursuant to 28 U.S.C. § 1446(a), a copy of all process, pleadings, and orders served on SOPC or obtained from the consenting Defendants is attached as Exhibit A to the Emanuel Declaration.
- 80. Upon filing this Notice of Removal, Defendants will furnish written notice to Plaintiff's counsel, and will file and serve a copy of this Notice with the Clerk of the Superior Court of Rhode Island for the County of Providence, pursuant to 28 U.S.C. § 1446(d).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>6</sup> In addition, bankruptcy removal under 28 U.S.C. § 1452 and federal officer removal "represent[] an exception to the general rule . . . that all defendants must join in the removal petition." *Ely Valley Mines, Inc. v. Hartford Accident & Indem. Co.*, 644 F.2d 1310, 1315 (9th Cir. 1981) (citing *Bradford v. Harding*, 284 F.2d 307, 309–10 (2d Cir. 1960)).

81. Accordingly, SOPC removes to this Court the above action pending against it in the Superior Court of Rhode Island for the County of Providence.

SHELL OIL PRODUCTS COMPANY, LLC By its attorneys.

/s/ Douglas J. Emanuel
Robert D. Fine (2447)
Douglas J. Emanuel (5176)
Chace Ruttenberg & Freedman, LLP
One Park Row, Suite 300
Providence, RI 02903

Tel.: (401) 453-6400 Email: demanuel@crfllp.com

Dated: July 13, 2018

#### **CERTIFICATE OF SERVICE**

I hereby certify that the foregoing document was filed through the ECF system on the 13th day of July, 2018, and will be sent electronically to the registered participants identified on the Notice of Electronic Filing. Additionally, I certify that on the 13th day of July, 2018, a copy of the foregoing document was sent via first class mail and email to counsel of record for Plaintiff State of Rhode Island to the following:

PETER F. KILMARTIN
REBECCA PARTINGTON
NEIL F.X. KELLY **DEPARTMENT OF THE ATTORNEY GENERAL**150 South Main Street
Providence, RI 02903

VICTOR M. SHER
MATTHEW K. EDLING
TIMOTHY R. SLOANE
MARTIN D. QUIÑONES
MEREDITH S. WILENSKY
KATIE H. JONES
SHER EDLING LLP
100 Montgomery Street, Suite 1410
San Francisco, CA 94104

/s/ Douglas J. Emanuel

## Attachment C

### UNITED STATES DISTRICT COURT FOR THE DISTRICT OF RHODE ISLAND

STATE OF RHODE ISLAND,

Plaintiff,

v.

CHEVRON CORP. et al.,

Defendants.

)

Defendants.

)

C.A. No. 18-395 WES

C.A. No. 18-395 WES

)

Defendants.

#### OPINION AND ORDER

WILLIAM E. SMITH, Chief Judge.

The State of Rhode Island brings this suit against energy companies it says are partly responsible for our once and future climate crisis. It does so under state law and, at least initially, in state court. Defendants removed the case here; the State asks that it go back. Because there is no federal jurisdiction under the various statutes and doctrines adverted to by Defendants, the Court GRANTS the State's Motion to Remand, ECF No. 40.

#### I. Background<sup>1</sup>

Climate change is expensive, and the State wants help paying for it. Compl.  $\P\P$  8, 12. Specifically from Defendants in this case, who together have extracted, advertised, and sold a

 $<sup>^{1}</sup>$  As given in the State's complaint. See Ten Taxpayer Citizens Grp. v. Cape Wind Assocs., 373 F.3d 183, 186 (1st Cir. 2004).

substantial percentage of the fossil fuels burned globally since the 1960s. Id. ¶¶ 7, 12, 19, 97. This activity has released an immense amount of greenhouse gas into the Earth's atmosphere, id., changing its climate and leading to all kinds of displacement, death (extinctions, even), and destruction, id. ¶¶ 53, 89-90, 199-213, 216. What is more, Defendants understood the consequences of their activity decades ago, when transitioning from fossil fuels to renewable sources of energy would have saved a world of trouble. Id. ¶¶ 106-46; 184-96. But instead of sounding the alarm, Defendants went out of their way to becloud the emerging scientific consensus and further delay changes — however existentially necessary — that would in any way interfere with their multibillion-dollar profits. Id. ¶¶ 147-77. All while quietly readying their capital for the coming fallout. Id. ¶¶ 178-83.

Pleading eight state-law causes of action, the State prays in law and equity to relieve the damage Defendants have and will inflict upon all the non-federal property and natural resources in Rhode Island. Id. ¶¶ 225-315. Casualties are expected to include the State's manmade infrastructure, its roads, bridges, railroads, dams, homes, businesses, and electric grid; the location and integrity of the State's expansive coastline, along with the wildlife who call it home; the mild summers and the winters that are already barely tolerable; the State fisc, as vast sums are expended to fortify before and rebuild after the increasing and

increasingly severe weather events; and Rhode Islanders themselves, who will be injured or worse by these events. <u>Id.</u> ¶¶ 8, 12, 15-18, 88-93, 197-218. The State says it will have more to bear than most: Sea levels in New England are increasing three to four times faster than the global average, and many of the State's municipalities lie below the floodplain. Id. ¶¶ 59-61, 76.

This is, needless to say, an important suit for both sides.

The question presently before the Court is where in our federal system it will be decided.

#### II. Discussion

Invented to protect nonresidents from state-court tribalism, 14C Charles Alan Wright & Arthur R. Miller, Federal Practice and Procedure § 3721 (rev. 4th ed. 2018), the right to remove is found in various statutes, which courts have taken to construing narrowly and against removal. Shamrock Oil & Gas Corp. v. Sheets, 313 U.S. 100, 108-09 (1941); Esposito v. Home Depot U.S.A., Inc., 590 F.3d 72, 76 (1st Cir. 2009); Rosselló-González v. Calderón-Serra, 398 F.3d 1, 11 (1st. Cir. 2004). Defendants cite several of these in their notice as bases for federal-court jurisdiction. Notice of Removal, ECF No. 1. None, however, allows Defendants to carry their burden of showing the case belongs here. See Wilson v. Republic Iron & Steel Co., 257 U.S. 92, 97 (1921) ("[D]efendant must take and carry the burden of proof, he being the actor in the removal proceeding.").

#### A. General Removal

The first Defendants invoke is the general removal statute. 28 U.S.C. § 1441. Section 1441 allows a defendant to remove "any civil action brought in a State court of which the district courts of the United States have original jurisdiction." The species of original jurisdiction Defendants claim exists in this case is federal-question jurisdiction. 28 U.S.C. § 1331. They argue, in other words, that Plaintiff's case arises under federal law. Whether a case arises under federal law is governed by the wellpleaded complaint rule. Vaden v. Discover Bank, 556 U.S. 49, 60 (2009). The rule states that removal based on federal-question jurisdiction is only proper where a federal question appears on the face of a well-pleaded complaint. Caterpillar Inc. v. Williams, 482 U.S. 386, 392 (1987). This rule operationalizes the maxim that a plaintiff is the master of her complaint: She may assert certain causes of action and omit others (even ones obviously available), and thereby appeal to the jurisdiction of her choice. Merrell Dow Pharm. Inc. v. Thompson, 478 U.S. 804, 809 n.6 (1986); Caterpillar Inc., 482 U.S. at 392 ("[Plaintiff] may avoid federal jurisdiction by exclusive reliance on state law.").

The State's complaint, on its face, contains no federal question, relying as it does on only state-law causes of action. See Compl.  $\P\P$  225-315. Defendants nevertheless insist that the

complaint is not well-pleaded, and that if it were, it would, in fact, evince a federal question on which to hang federal jurisdiction. Here they invoke the artful-pleading doctrine. "[A]n independent corollary of the well-pleaded complaint rule that a plaintiff may not defeat removal by omitting to plead necessary federal questions in a complaint," Franchise Tax Bd. v. Constr. Laborers Vacation Tr. for S. Cal., 463 U.S. 1, 22 (1983), the artful-pleading doctrine is "designed to prevent a plaintiff from unfairly placing a thumb on the jurisdictional scales," López-Muñoz v. Triple-S Salud, Inc., 754 F.3d 1, 5 (1st Cir. 2014). See Wright & Miller, supra, § 3722.1. According to Defendants, the State uses two strains of artifice in an attempt to keep its case in state court: one based on complete preemption, the other on a substantial federal question. See Wright & Miller, supra, § 3722.1 (discussing the three types of case in which the artful pleading doctrine has applied).

#### 1. Complete Preemption

Taking these in turn, Defendants first argue — and two district courts have recently held — that a state's public-nuisance claim premised on the effects of climate change is "necessarily governed by federal common law." California v. BP P.L.C., Nos. C 17-06011 WHA, C 17-06012 WHA, 2018 WL 1064293, at \*2 (N.D. Cal. Feb. 27, 2018); accord City of New York v. BP P.L.C., 325 F. Supp. 3d 466, 471-72 (S.D.N.Y. 2018). Defendants, in essence, want the

Court to peek beneath the purported state-law façade of the State's public-nuisance claim, see the claim for what it would need to be to have a chance at viability, and convert it to that (i.e., into a claim based on federal common law) for purposes of the present jurisdictional analysis. The problem for Defendants is that there is nothing in the artful-pleading doctrine that sanctions this particular transformation.

The closest the doctrine gets to doing so is called complete preemption. Compare Defs.' Opp'n to Pl.'s Mot. to Remand 9, ECF No. 87 ("[T]he Complaint pleads claims that arise, if at all, under federal common law . . .") and id. at 19 ("[Plaintiff's claims] are necessarily governed by federal common law."), with Franchise Tax Bd., 463 U.S. at 24 ("[I]f a federal cause of action completely preempts a state cause of action any complaint that comes within the scope of the federal cause of action necessarily 'arises under' federal law."); see also Mayor of Balt. v. BP P.L.C., Civil Action No. ELH-18-2357, 2019 WL 2436848, at \*6-7 (D. Md. June 20, 2019). Complete preemption is different from ordinary preemption, which is a defense and therefore does not provide a basis for removal, "even if the defense is anticipated in the plaintiff's complaint, and even if both parties admit that the defense is the only question truly at issue in the case." Franchise Tax Bd., 463 U.S.

at 14, 24.<sup>2</sup> It is a difference of kind, moreover, not degree: complete preemption is jurisdictional. <u>López-Muñoz</u>, 754 F.3d at 5; <u>Lehmann v. Brown</u>, 230 F.3d 916, 919-920 (7th Cir. 2000); Wright & Miller, <u>supra</u>, § 3722.2. When a state-law cause of action is completely preempted, it "transmogrifies" into, <u>Lawless v. Steward Health Care Sys.</u>, <u>LLC</u>, 894 F.3d 9, 17-18 (1st Cir. 2018), or less dramatically, "is considered, from its inception, a federal claim, and therefore arises under federal law," <u>Caterpillar Inc.</u>, 482 U.S. at 393. The claim is then removable pursuant to Section 1441. <u>Beneficial Nat'l Bank v. Anderson</u>, 539 U.S. 1, 8 (2003).

Congress, not the federal courts, initiates this "extreme and unusual" mechanism. <u>Fayard v. Ne. Vehicle Servs.</u>, <u>LLC</u>, 533 F.3d 42, 47-49 (1st Cir. 2008); <u>see, e.g.</u>, <u>Beneficial Nat'l Bank</u>, 539 U.S. at 8 ("[W]here this Court has found complete pre-emption . . . the federal statutes at issue provided the exclusive cause

Pefendants cite <u>Boyle v. United Technologies Corp.</u> early in their brief, and highlighted it at oral argument, as recommending that this Court consider the State's suit as one implicating "uniquely federal interests" and consequently governed by federal common law. 487 U.S. 500, 504 (1988). <u>Boyle</u> was not a removal case, but rather one brought in diversity, where the Court held that federal common law regarding the performance of federal procurement contracts preempts, in the ordinary sense, state tort law. <u>Id.</u> at 502, 507-08, 512. <u>Boyle</u> therefore does not help Defendants. And although of no legal moment, it is nonetheless a matter of historical interest that out of all his opinions, <u>Boyle</u> was the one Justice Scalia would have most liked to have had back. Gil Seinfeld, <u>The Good</u>, the Bad, and the Ugly: <u>Reflections of a Counterclerk</u>, 114 Mich. L. Rev. First Impressions 111, 115 & n. 9 (2016).

of action for the claim asserted and also set forth procedures and remedies governing that cause of action." (emphasis added)); Caterpillar Inc., 482 U.S. at 393 ("On occasion, the Court has concluded that the pre-emptive force of a statute is extraordinary that it converts an ordinary state common-law complaint into one stating a federal claim for purposes of the well-pleaded complaint rule." (quotation marks omitted) (emphasis added)); Metro. Life Ins. Co. v. Taylor, 481 U.S. 58, 63-64 (1987) ("Congress may so completely pre-empt a particular area that any civil complaint raising this select group of claims is necessarily federal in character." (emphasis added)); López-Muñoz, 754 F.3d at 5 ("The linchpin of the complete preemption analysis is whether Congress intended that federal law provide the exclusive cause of action for the claims asserted by the plaintiff." (emphasis added)); Fayard, 533 F.3d at 45 ("Complete preemption is a shorthand for the doctrine that in certain matters Congress so strongly intended an exclusive federal cause of action that what a plaintiff calls a state law claim is to be recharacterized as a federal claim." (first emphasis added)); Marcus v. AT&T Corp., 138 F.3d 46, 55 (2d Cir. 1998) ("[T]here is no complete preemption without a clear statement to that effect from Congress." (emphasis added)); Wright & Miller, supra, § 3722.2 ("In concluding that a claim is completely preempted, a federal court finds that Congress desired not just to provide a federal defense to a state-law claim but

also to replace the state-law claim with a federal law claim . . . ." (emphasis added)). Without a federal statute wielding — or authorizing the federal courts to wield — "extraordinary preemptive power," there can be no complete preemption. Metro. Life Ins. Co., 481 U.S. at 65.

Defendants are right that transborder air and water disputes are one of the limited areas where federal common law survived Erie R. Co. v. Tompkins, 304 U.S. 64, 78 (1938). See, e.g., Am. Elec. Power Co. v. Connecticut, 564 U.S. 410, 420-21 (2011); Illinois v. City of Milwaukee, 406 U.S. 91, 103 (1972) ("When we deal with air and water in their ambient or interstate aspects, there is a federal common law."). At least some of it, though, has been displaced by the Clean Air Act ("CAA"). See Am. Elec. Power Co., 564 U.S. at 424 (holding that "the Clean Air Act and the EPA actions it authorizes displace any federal common law right to seek abatement of carbon-dioxide emissions from fossil-fuel fired power plants"); Native Village of Kivalina v. ExxonMobil Corp., 696 F.3d 849, 856-58 (9th Cir. 2012). But whether displaced or not, environmental federal common law does not - absent congressional say-so - completely preempt the State's publicnuisance claim, and therefore provides no basis for removal. Cf. Marcus, 138 F.3d at 54 ("After Metropolitan Life, it would be disingenuous to maintain that, while the [Federal Communications Act of 1934] does not preempt state law claims directly, it manages

to do so indirectly under the quise of federal common law.").

With respect to the CAA, Defendants argue it too completely preempts the State's claims. The statutes that have been found to completely preempt state-law causes of action - the Employee Retirement Income Security Act, for example, see Metro. Life Ins. Co., 481 U.S. at 67 - all do two things: They "provide[] the exclusive cause of action for the claim asserted and also set forth procedures and remedies governing that cause of action." Beneficial Nat'l Bank, 539 U.S. at 8; Fayard, 533 F.3d at 47 ("For complete preemption, the critical question is whether federal law provides an exclusive substitute federal cause of action that a federal court (or possibly a federal agency) can employ for the kind of claim or wrong at issue."). Defendants fail to point to where in the CAA this happens. As far as the Court can tell, the CAA authorizes nothing like the State's claims, much less to the exclusion of those sounding in state law. In fact, the CAA itself says that controlling air pollution "is the primary responsibility of States and local governments." 42 U.S.C. § 7401(a)(3); see Am. Elec. Power Co., 564 U.S. at 428 ("The Act envisions extensive cooperation between federal and state authorities . . . ."); EPA v. EME Homer City Generation, L.P., 572 U.S. 489, 537 (2014) (Scalia, J., dissenting) ("Down to its very core, the Clean Air Act sets forth a federalism-focused regulatory strategy.").

Furthermore, in its section providing for citizen suits, the

CAA saves "any right which any person (or class of persons) may have under any statute or common law to seek enforcement of any emission standard or limitation or to seek any other relief." 42 U.S.C. § 7604(e). One circuit court has taken this language as an indication that "Congress did not wish to abolish state control" over remediating air pollution. Her Majesty the Queen in Right v. City of Detroit, 874 F.2d 332, 343 (6th Cir. 1989); see also Am. Fuel & Petrochemical Mfrs. v. O'Keefe, 903 F.3d 903 (9th Cir. 2018) ("Air pollution prevention falls under the broad police powers of the states, which include the power to protect the health of citizens in the state." (quotation marks omitted)). Elsewhere, the Act protects "the right of any State or political subdivision thereof to adopt or enforce (1) any standard or limitation respecting emissions of air pollutants or (2) any requirement respecting control or abatement of air pollution . . . . " 42 U.S.C. § 7416. A statute that goes so far out of its way to preserve state prerogatives cannot be said to be an expression of Congress's "extraordinary pre-emptive power" to convert state-law into federal-law claims. Metro. Life Ins. Co., 481 U.S. at 65. No court has so held, and neither will this one. 3

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>3</sup> Defendants toss in an argument that the foreign-affairs doctrine completely preempts the State's claims. The Court finds this argument without a plausible legal basis. See Mayor of Balt., 2019 WL 2436848, at \*12 ("[T]he foreign affairs doctrine is inapposite in the complete preemption context." (quotation marks omitted)).

#### 2. Grable Jurisdiction

There is, as mentioned above, a second brand of artful pleading of which Defendants accuse the State. They aver the State has hid within their state-law claims a "federal issue, actually disputed and substantial, which a federal forum may entertain without disturbing any congressionally approved balance of federal and state judicial responsibilities." Grable & Sons Metal Prods., Inc. v. Darue Eng'g & Mfg., 545 U.S. 308, 314 (2005). If complete preemption is a state-law cloche covering a federal-law dish, Grable jurisdiction is a state-law recipe requiring a federal-law ingredient. Although the latter, like the former, is rare. Empire Healthchoice Assurance, Inc. v. McVeigh, 547 U.S. 677, 699 (2006) (describing Grable jurisdiction as lying in a "special and small category" of cases). And it too does not exist here, because Defendants have not located "a right or immunity created by the Constitution or laws of the United States" that is "an element and an essential one, of the [State]'s cause[s] of action." Gully v. First Nat. Bank in Meridian, 299 U.S. 109, 112 (1936).

The State's are thoroughly state-law claims. Compl ¶¶ 225-315. The rights, duties, and rules of decision implicated by the complaint are all supplied by state law, without reference to anything federal. See id. Defendants' best cases are all distinguishable on this point. See Gunn v. Minton, 568 U.S. 251, 259 (2013) (finding Grable jurisdiction lies where "[t]o prevail

on his legal malpractice claim . . . [plaintiff] must show that he would have prevailed in his federal patent infringement case . . [which] will necessarily require application of patent law to the facts of [his] case"); Grable, 545 U.S. at 314-15 (same where plaintiff "premised its superior title claim on a failure by the IRS to give it adequate notice, as defined by federal law"); Bd. of Comm'rs v. Tenn. Gas Pipeline Co., 850 F.3d 714, 722 (5th Cir. 2017) (same where "[plaintiff's] complaint draws on federal law as the exclusive basis for holding [d]efendants liable for some of their actions"); One & Ken Valley Hous. Grp. v. Me. State Hous. Auth., 716 F.3d 218, 225 (1st Cir. 2013) (same where "the "dispute . . . turn[s] on the interpretation of a contract provision approved by a federal agency pursuant to a federal statutory scheme" (quotation marks omitted)); R.I. Fishermen's All., Inc. v. R.I. Dep't of Envtl. Mgmt., 585 F.3d 42, 50 (1st Cir. 2009) (same where the federal question "is inherent in the state-law question itself because the state statute expressly references federal law").

By mentioning foreign affairs, federal regulations, and the navigable waters of the United States, Defendants seek to raise issues that they may press in the course of this litigation, but that are not perforce presented by the State's claims. Accord Cty. of San Mateo v. Chevron Corp., 294 F. Supp. 3d 934, 938 (N.D. Cal. 2018) (declining to exercise Grable jurisdiction where

"defendants have not pointed to a specific issue of federal law that must necessarily be resolved to adjudicate the state law claims" and instead "mostly gesture to federal law and federal concerns in a generalized way"); cf. R.I. Fishermen's All., 585 F.3d at 49 (upholding exercise of Grable jurisdiction where it was "not logically possible for the plaintiffs to prevail on [their] cause of action without affirmatively answering the embedded question of . . . federal law"). These are, if anything, premature defenses, which even if ultimately decisive, cannot support removal. See Merrell Dow, 478 U.S. at 808 ("A defense that raises federal question is inadequate to confer jurisdiction."); Franchise Tax Bd., 463 U.S. at 13 (holding that state-law claim did not support federal jurisdiction where "California law establish[ed] . . . [the relevant] set of conditions, without reference to federal law . . . [which would] become[] relevant only by way of a defense to an obligation created entirely by state law, and then only if appellant has made out a valid claim for relief under state law"). Nor, for that matter, can the novelty of this suite of issues as applied to claims like the State's. Merrell Dow, 478 U.S. at 817.

#### B. Less-General Removal

The Court will be brief in dismissing Defendants' arguments under bespoke jurisdictional law. The Outer Continental Shelf Lands Act does not grant federal jurisdiction here, see 43 U.S.C.

§ 1349(b): Defendants' operations on the Outer Continental Shelf may have contributed to the State's injuries; however, Defendants have not shown that these injuries would not have occurred but for those operations. See In re DEEPWATER HORIZON, 745 F.3d 157, 163-64 (5th Cir. 2014). There is no federal-enclave jurisdiction: Although federal land used "for the Erection of Forts, Magazines, Arsenals, dock-Yards, and other needful Buildings," U.S. Const. art. I, § 8, cl. 17, exists in Rhode Island, and elsewhere may have been the site of Defendants' activities, the State's claims did not arise there, especially since its complaint avoids seeking relief for damages to any federal lands. See Washington v. Monsanto Co., 274 F. Supp. 3d 1125, 1132 (W.D. Wash. 2017) (holding that exercise of federal-enclave jurisdiction improper where "Washington avowedly does not seek relief for [toxic-chemical] contamination of federal territories").

No causal connection between any actions Defendants took while "acting under" federal officers or agencies and the allegations supporting the State's claims means there are not grounds for federal-officer removal, 28 U.S.C. § 1442(a)(1): Defendants cannot show the alleged promotion and sale of fossil fuels abetted by a sophisticated misinformation campaign were "justified by [their] federal duty." Mesa v. California, 489 U.S. 121, 131-32 (1989). They are also unable to show removal is proper under the bankruptcy-removal statute, 28 U.S.C. § 1452(a), or

because of admiralty jurisdiction, 28 U.S.C. § 1333(1). Not the former because this is an action "designed primarily to protect the public safety and welfare." McMullen v. Sevigny (In re McMullen), 386 F.3d 320, 325 (1st Cir. 2004); see 28 U.S.C. § 1452(a) (excepting from bankruptcy removal any "civil action by a governmental unit to enforce such governmental unit's police or regulatory power"); In re Methyl Tertiary Butyl Ether ("MTBE") Prods. Liab. Litig., 488 F.3d 112, 133 (2d Cir. 2007) (rejecting bankruptcy removal in cases whose "clear goal . . . [was] to remedy and prevent environmental damage with potentially serious consequences for public health, a significant area of state policy"). And not the latter either because state-law claims cannot be removed based solely on federal admiralty jurisdiction. See, e.g., Coronel v. AK Victory, 1 F. Supp. 3d 1175, 1187-88 (W.D. Wash. 2014); Gonzalez v. Red Hook Container Terminal LLC, 16-CV-5104 (NGG) (RER), 2016 WL 7322335, at \*3 (E.D.N.Y. Dec. 15, 2016) (relying on "longstanding precedent holding that admiralty issues, standing alone, are insufficient to make a case removable").

#### III. Conclusion

Federal jurisdiction is finite. See, e.g., U.S. Const. art. III, § 2, cl. 1. So while this Court thinks itself a fine place to litigate, the law is clear that the State can take its business elsewhere if it wants — by pleading around federal jurisdiction — unless Defendants provide a valid reason to force removal under

Henson, 537 U.S. 28, 32 (2002); Great N. Ry. Co. v. Alexander, 246 U.S. 276, 280 (1918) ("[A] suit commenced in a state court must remain there until cause is shown for its transfer under some act of Congress."). Because Defendants' attempts in this regard fall short, the State's Motion to Remand, ECF No. 40, is GRANTED. The remand order shall be stayed for sixty days, however, giving the parties time to brief and the Court to decide whether a further stay pending appeal is warranted.

IT IS SO ORDERED.

William E. Smith

Chief Judge

Date: July 22, 2019

# Attachment D

Case: 19-1818 Document: 00117499123 Page: 1 Date Filed: 10/07/2019 Entry ID: 6287872

## **United States Court of Appeals**For the First Circuit

No. 19-1818

STATE OF RHODE ISLAND,

Plaintiff - Appellee,

v.

SHELL OIL PRODUCTS COMPANY, LLC; CHEVRON CORP.; CHEVRON USA, INC.; EXXONMOBIL CORP.; BP, PLC; BP AMERICA, INC.; BP PRODUCTS NORTH AMERICA, INC.; ROYAL DUTCH SHELL PLC; MOTIVA ENTERPRISES, LLC; CITGO PETROLEUM CORP.; CONOCOPHILLIPS; CONOCOPHILLIPS COMPANY; PHILLIPS 66; MARATHON OIL COMPANY; MARATHON OIL CORPORATION; MARATHON PETROLEUM CORP.; MARATHON PETROLEUM COMPANY, LP; SPEEDWAY, LLC; HESS CORP.; LUKOIL PAN AMERICAS LLC; GETTY PETROLEUM MARKETING, INC.,

Defendants - Appellants.

Before

Howard, <u>Chief Judge</u>, Torruella and Thompson, <u>Circuit Judges</u>.

**ORDER OF COURT** 

Entered: October 7, 2019

Defendants-appellants request a stay pending appeal of the district court's July 22, 2019, Opinion and Order remanding the underlying action to Rhode Island state court. D. Ct. Dkt. #122. The motion is <u>denied</u>. The Clerk of Court will set a briefing schedule in the ordinary course. Any party intending to seek expedited review should so move promptly.

By the Court:

Maria R. Hamilton, Clerk

cc:

Rebecca Tedford Partington, Neil F. X. Kelly, Corrie J. Yackulic, Matthew Kendall Edling, Victor Marc Sher, David Charles Frederick, Robert David Fine, Douglas Jay Emanuel, Brendan J. Crimmins, Elizabeth Ann Kim, Jerome C. Roth, Grace W. Knofczynski, Neal S. Manne, Gerald J. Petros, Robin-Lee Main, Joshua S. Lipshutz, Theodore J. Boutrous Jr., Matthew Thomas Oliverio, Kannon K. Shanmugam, William Thomas Marks, Daniel J. Toal, Theodore V. Wells Jr., Jaren Janghorbani, John A. Tarantino, Patricia K. Rocha, Nicole J. Benjamin, Nancy Gordon Milburn, Philip H. Curtis, Matthew T. Heartney, John E. Bulman, Stephen John MacGillivray, Lisa S. Meyer, Nathan P. Eimer, Pamela R. Hanebutt, Raphael Janove, Ryan Walsh, Michael J. Colucci, Robert G. Flanders Jr., Timothy K. Baldwin, Jameson R. Jones, Margaret Tough, Sean C. Grimsley, Steven Mark Bauer, Robert P. Reznick, Stephen M. Prignano, James L. Stengel, Jeffrey B. Pine, Shawn Patrick Regan, Shannon S. Broome, Ann Marie Mortimer, Jason Christopher Preciphs, Jacob Scott Janoe, Lauren Motola-Davis, Samuel A. Kennedy-Smith